This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

22205 e. 26/6

SIR JOHN FROISSART'S

CHRONICLES

OF

ENGLAND, FRANCE, SPAIN,

AND THE

ADJOINING COUNTRIES,

FROM THE LATTER PART OF THE REIGN OF EDWARD II.

TO THE CORONATION OF HENRY IV.

NEWLY TRANSLATED FROM THE FRENCH EDITIONS,
WITH VARIATIONS AND ADDITIONS FROM MANY CELEBRATED MSS.

By THOMAS JOHNES.

Who so shall telle a tale after a man,
He moste reherse, as neighe as ever he can,
Everich worde, if it be in his charge,
All speke he never so rudely and so large;
Or elles he moste tellen his tale untrewe,
Or feinen thinges, or finden wordes newe.

CHAUCER'S PROLOGUE.

THE THIRD EDITION.

TO WHICH IS PREFIXED,
A LIFE OF THE AUTHOR, AN ESSAY ON HIS WORKS,
A CRITICISM ON HIS HISTORY,
AND A DISSERTATION ON HIS POETRY.

VOL. VI.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR LONGMAN, HURST, REES, AND ORME, PATERNOSTER-ROW; AND J. WHITE, FLEET-STREET.

1808.

BODLEIAN
D
11 NOV 1958
LIBRARY

J. M'CREERY, Printer,
Black-horse-court, Fleet-street.

THE

CONTENTS

OF

THE SIXTH VOLUME.

CHAP. I. THE Earl of Flanders again lays siege to Ghent - - - Page 1

II. The Earl of Flanders raises the Siege of Ghent.—Two rich Citizens, desirous of negotiating a Peace between the Earl and the Town, are put to Death by Peter Du Bois and Philip Von Artaveld - - - - - 7

III. An Insurrection in Paris, on Account of the intended Taxes.—The Lord De Coucy appeases it.—The Duke of Anjou makes Preparation for his Journey to Naples - - - 14

IV. The English make an Expedition against the Spaniards, contrary to the Orders of the King of Portugal.—The Castle of Fighiere is taken - - 20

V. After the Conquest of the Castle of Fighiere, the Canon de Robersac, returning to his Garrison, is in great Danger.—Succours come from France to Castille - - - - 25

VI. The Emperor Winceslaus sends his Sister Anne to King Richard of England, who makes her his Queen - 30

Page

CHAP. VII. The king of France cannot obtain Money from the Receiver at Paris. —The Duke of Anjou marches into Italy with a noble Attendance of Knights - - - - - 34

VIII. The Earl of Savoy, who had accompanied the Duke of Anjou to Naples, orders a Man to be beheaded, who had boasted that he would give them Possession of the Castel Del Ovo by Enchantment. - - 40

IX. The Canon de Robersac makes another Excursion contrary to the Will of the King of Portugal, and takes several Places adjoining to Seville - 44

X. The Canon and his Companions gain much Booty from the King of Castille.—They mutiny against the King of Portugal, who orders their Pay to be instantly delivered to them - 49

XI. The Kings of Castille and Portugal assemble their Forces.—Peace made between them, against the Will of the English - - - - - 59

XII. A Joust between a French Knight and an English Squire.—The Earl of Cambridge leads back his Army to England, with his Son, whose betrothed Wife, the Infanta of Portugal, is afterwards married to the King of Castille - - - - - 64

XIII. Ghent is in great Distress for Provisions. They are succoured by the Inhabitants of Liege - - - - 69

CHAP.

Page

CHAP. XIV. The Earl of Flanders sends a harsh Answer to those who wished to mediate a Peace between him and Ghent. —The Populace, under the Name of Maillotins, rise again at Paris - 77

XV. The Citizens of Ghent, after having heard from Philip Von Artaveld the Terms of Peace which he had brought from the Conferences at Tournay, march out, to the Number of five Thousand, to attack the Earl of Flanders in Bruges - - 82

XVI. The Order of Battle of the Ghent Men.—They defeat the Earl of Flanders and the Men of Bruges.—The Means by which this was brought about - - - - - - 90

XVII. Bruges is taken by the Ghent Army.—The Earl of Flanders saves himself in the House of a poor Woman - 97

XVIII. The Ghent Men spare the foreign Merchants in Bruges.—The Earl of Flanders quits Bruges, and returns to Lille, whither some of his People had already retreated - - - 103

XIX. The Conduct of the Ghent Men at Bruges.—All the Towns in Flanders surrender to them except Oudenarde - - - - - - 109

XX. Philip Von Artaveld, on his Return to Ghent, lives in great Pomp.—The Earl of Flanders resides in Lille - 113

XXI. Philip Von Artaveld and the Ghent Men lay siege to Oudenarde - 117

CHAP.

Page

CHAP. XXII. A Detachment of the Ghent Army from before Oudenarde, in overrunning the Lands of their Lord, burn some Villages on the Frontiers of France, which causes a War between the King of France and them 120

XXIII. The Duke of Burgundy instigates his Nephew King Charles to make War on Ghent and its Allies, as well in revenge for the burnt Villages as to assist in the Recovery of Flanders, for the Earl, who was his Vassal - - - - - - 124

XXIV. Charles the Sixth, King of France, from a Dream, chooses a flying Hart for his Device - - 128

XXV. During the Siege of Oudenarde, the Rebels entreat King Charles to make Peace between them and the Earl of Flanders.—The King answers them with Contempt.—They then endeavour to draw the English into an Alliance with them - - - - 131

XXVI. The Ambassadors from Ghent fail in forming an Alliance with England - 139

XXVII. The Messenger which the Ghent Men had sent to King Charles of France is delivered from Prison.—Some Prisoners from Tourtay and Courtray are exchanged for each other 141

XXVIII. King Charles orders Commissioners to enter into certain Treaties with the Flemings.—Their Messengers are imprisoned at the Moment they demanded Passports - - - 145

CHAP.

Page

CHAP. XXIX. The Answer of Philip Von Artaveld to the French Commissioners, which he sent by a Prisoner of War from Oudenarde - - - - - 148

XXX. Philip Von Artaveld writes affectedly civil Letters to Tournay.—The French Commissioners return to the King - - - - - 153

XXXI. King Charles, after hearing the Report of his Commissioners, at the Instigation of the Earl of Flanders who was present, assembles his Army in Artois against the Flemings.—Philip Von Artaveld guards the Passes into Flanders - - - - - 156

XXXII. Several Knights of the Party of the Earl of Flanders, having passed Pont-Amenin, are defeated and killed on their Attempt to repass it, the Flemings having broken down the Bridge.—Philip, hearing this News when at Ypres, makes Use of it to encourage the Inhabitants - - - - 161

XXXIII. The Order of the French Army in its March to Flanders, after they had heard the Bridges were broken and guarded - - - - - 166

XXXIV. Some few of the French, not being able to cross the Lis at the Bridge of Commines, find Means of doing so, by Boats and other Craft unknown to the Flemings - - - 173

XXXV. A small Body of French, having crossed the Lis, draw up in Battle Array before the Flemings - - - 180

CHAP.

Page

CHAP. XXXVI. The French who had crossed the Lis defeat, with great Slaughter, Peter Du Bois and the Flemings.—The Van-guard of the French Army repair and pass over the Bridge of Commines - - - - - 186

XXXVII. Philip Von Artaveld takes Measures to resist the Force of the King of France.—He receives an Answer from his Ambassadors in England 193

XXXVIII. The King of France crosses the Lis at the Bridge of Commines.—The Town of Ypres surrenders to him 196

XXXIX. The King of France receives Information of a Riot among the Parisians.—Several Places in Flanders surrender to him - - - 200

XL. The King of France lodges in Ypres.—Peter Du Bois prevents Bruges from surrendering to the King.—Philip Von Artaveld assembles his forces to combat the French - 203

XLI. Philip Von Artaveld, having entertained his Captains at Supper, gives them Instructions how they are to act on the Morrow at the Battle of Rosebecque.—Wonderful Appearances in the Heavens are seen during this Night - - - - - 208

CHAP.

Page

CHAP. XLII. King Charles entertains at Supper his Uncles and some others of his principal Barons on the Eve of the Battle of Rosebecque.—The Constable De Clisson is excused from attending the King's Person during the Battle - - - - - 214

XLIII. Philip Von Artaveld and his Flemings quit the strong Position they had taken in the Morning, to encamp on Mont D'Or, near to Ypres.—The Constable and Admiral of France, with the Bastard of Langres, set out to reconnoitre their Situation - - - - - 218

XLIV. The Battle of Rosebecque, between the French and Flemings.—Philip Von Artaveld is slain, and his whole Army defeated - - - 222

XLV. The Number of Slain at the Battle of Rosebecque and Pursuit afterwards.—Philip Von Artaveld is hanged after he was dead.—The Siege of Oudenarde is raised.—Peter Du Bois retreats to Ghent.—The King of France fixes his Quarters in the Town of Courtray - - 228

XLVI. Bruges submits to the King's Mercy.—The Count De Blois guards the Country of Hainault from being pillaged.—The Inhabitants of Ghent gain Courage from Peter Du Bois 234

CHAP.

Page

CHAP. XLVII. The Treaty between the English and Flemings is broken.—The King of France departs from Flanders 240

XLVIII. Vain Attempts made for Peace between the King of France and Ghent.—The King, on his Return to Paris, orders the Chains to be taken away that barricaded the Streets.—He severely punishes the Parisians - - - - - 244

XLIX. Several of the principal Citizens of Paris are beheaded with John Des Marets, and many others in the different Towns and Cities in France 253

L. The Ghent Men renew the War.—The Earl of Flanders becomes an Object of Hatred to the English - 256

LI. Pope Urban sends Bulls into England for the Destruction of the Clementists.—The Bishop of Norwich appointed Commander in Chief against them - - - - - - 260

LII. The Bishop of Norwich, Commander of the English in the Croisade of Urban against the Clementists, disembarks at Calais with his Army of Urbanists - - - - - 263

CHAP.

Page

CHAP. LIII. The Bishop of Norwich, Commander of the Urbanists, enters Flanders contrary to the Opinion of Sir Hugh Calverley.—The Earl of Flanders sends Ambassadors to the Bishop, who returns a harsh Answer 268

LIV. The Bishop of Norwich marches towards Dunkirk.—He defeats twelve thousand Flemings and takes the Town - - - - - - 278

LV. The English, under the Command of the Bishop of Norwich, having conquered all the Coast from Gravelines to Sluys, lay siege to Ypres - 283

LVI. The Men of Ghent assist the English in their Siege of Ypres.—The Lord De St. Leger going to reinforce the Garrison of Courtray, by Orders of the King of France, is defeated by a party of English near Commines - - - - - 287

LVII. The Bishop of Liege, not being able to bring about a Peace between the Bishop of Norwich and the Earl of Flanders, returns home - - 290

LVIII. The King of France issues a grand Summons, with the Intention of raising the Siege of Ypres.—Some of the Earl of Flanders' Men are defeated by the English before the Church of Emenin - - - 294

CHAP.

Page

CHAP. LIX. The English and Ghent Men make a sharp Attack on Ypres; but, learning that the King of France had marched an Army into Artois, they instantly break up the Siege - 297

LX. Duke Frederick of Bavaria arrives at the Army of the King of France.—Count Guy Du Blois, notwithstanding his ill Health, comes to Arras attended by his Men at Arms - 302

LXI. The Van of the French Army takes Cassel and Trughen. The English abandon Bergues, and retire to Bourbourg, wherein the King of France besieges them - - - - 304

LXII. Francis Atremen surprises Oudenarde in the Night-time - - 315

LXIII. Aymerigot Marcel, an English Captain on the Borders of Auvergne, takes by Stratagem the Castle of Marquel.—The Countess Dauphine ransoms it for five thousand Francs 320

LXIV. The King of France orders Bourbourg to be attacked.—It is surrendered to him by Capitulation, when the English quit Flanders.—He then disbands his Army - - 324

CHAP.

Page

CHAP. LXV. The Bishop of Norwich and those who accompanied him in his Expedition are badly received on their Return to England.—Certain great Personages are deputed to negotiate a Peace or Truce between the Kings of France and England.—The Duke of Bavaria dies - - - - 332

LXVI. During these Conferences the Ghent Men insult Tournay.—A Truce is concluded between the Kings of France and England and their Allies - - - - - - 336

LXVII. The Earl of Flanders dies.—The Ceremony of his Funeral - 338

LXVIII. The Earls of Northumberland and Nottingham raise a Body of English to make an Excursion into Scotland.—Ambassadors are sent from France to Scotland, to notify the Truces which had been made between France and England - 345

LXIX. The Barons and Knights of Scotland, in conjunction with some French Knights, undertake an Expedition into England without the Knowledge of the King of Scotland, who sends a Herald to make his Excuses to the King of England - - 351

CHAP.

Page

CHAP. LXX. The Truces which had been made between the French, the English and their Allies, are proclaimed in Scotland.—The French Knights, on their Return from Scotland, are in great Danger from the Zealanders - 356

LXXI. The Lord Destournay assembles Forces to retake Oudenarde.—He conquers it by Stratagem - - - - 361

LXXII. The Duke of Anjou dies at a Castle near Naples.—His Widow is advised to solicit the Pope for the Possession of Provence - - 365

LXXIII. Preparations are made in France for the Renewal of the War with England.—The Duchess of Brabant succeeds in forming a Marriage between the Children of Burgundy and those of Hainault - - - - 368

LXXIV. The King and the Nobles of France and Hainault lay in great Provision of Stores at Cambray.—The Duke of Lancaster sends Ambassadors to the Earl of Hainault.—The Marriages of the Children of Burgundy and Hainault are concluded - 374

LXXV. The Duke of Berry betroths his Daughter to the Son of the Count De Blois.—The Duke of Bourbon and the Count De La Marche issue their Summons to invade Limousin 379

CHAP.

Page

CHAP. LXXVI. Sir John De Vienne, Admiral of France sails to Scotland, to carry on the War against the English at the Expiration of the Truce - 382

LXXVII. The Pillagers of Ghent, surnamed Porters, commit much mischief.—Francis Atremeu defeats some French Troops near Ardembourg - 384

THE

CHRONICLES

OF

ENGLAND, FRANCE, SPAIN, &c.

CHAP. I.

THE EARL OF FLANDERS AGAIN LAYS SIEGE TO GHENT.

WHILE the affairs you have heard were paſſing in England, there was no interminſion in the wars which the earl of Flanders was carrying on againſt Ghent, and which thoſe citizens waged againſt him.

You know that Philip von Artaveld was choſen commander in Ghent, through the recommendation of Peter du Bois, who adviſed him, when in office, to become cruel and wicked to be the more feared. Philip did not forget this doctrine, for he had not long been governor of Ghent before he had twelve perſons beheaded in his preſence: ſome ſaid, they were thoſe who had been principally concerned in the murder of his father, and thus he revenged himſelf on them.

Philip von Artaveld began his reign with great power, and made himſelf beloved and feared by

many, more eſpecially by thoſe who followed the profeſſion of arms: for, to gain their favour, he refuſed them nothing; every thing was abandoned to them. I may be aſked how the Ghent men were able to carry on this war; and I will anſwer to the beſt of my ability, according to the information I received. They were firmly united among themſelves, and maintained the poor, each according to his means: thus, by being ſo firmly united, they were of great force: beſides, Ghent, taken all together, is one of the ſtrongeſt towns in the world, provided Brabant, Zealand, and Holland, be not againſt it; but, in caſe theſe countries were leagued with Flanders, they would be ſhut up, ſurrounded and ſtarved. Theſe three countries, however, were never their enemies; ſo that their warfare with the earl of Flanders was more ſtrenuouſly carried on, and longer continued.

At the commencement of Philip von Artaveld's government, the deacon of the weavers was accuſed of treaſon. He was arreſted and committed to priſon. In order to know the truth of the accuſation, his houſe was ſearched, wherein was found ſome ſaltpetre in powder. The deacon was beheaded, and dragged through the town by the ſhoulders, for a traitor, and to ſerve as an example to others.

The earl of Flanders reſolved to lay ſiege again to Ghent: he therefore iſſued his ſummons to a number of knights and ſquires, and to the inhabitants of the principal towns. He ſent to Mechlin, from whence he had many men. He wrote

to

to his couſins, ſir Robert, and ſir William de Namur at that time count d'Artois, the counteſs, his mother, being lately dead, who brought a number of knights from Artois. In this ſummons, the lord de Dampierre was not forgotten: he came to offer his ſervices, with as many as he could collect, and was handſomely attended by knights and ſquires from Hainault.

The earl advanced to inveſt Ghent, on the ſide towards Bruges and Hainault. During the time it laſted, there were many ſkirmiſhes; and the Ghent men made frequent ſallies in ſearch of adventures, in which ſometimes they were repulſed, at others they conquered. But the perſon who gained the greateſt renown was the young lord d'Anghien: all the young knights deſirous of glory cheerfully followed his banners.

The lord d'Anghien marched with full four thouſand men, well mounted, without counting thoſe on foot, to beſiege Grammont, which was attached to Ghent: he had before harraſſed them much, but could not win it. This time, however, he came in greater force, and, on a Sunday, had it ſtormed at upwards of forty places: he did not ſpare himſelf, but was one of the moſt active, and the firſt who placed his banner on the walls. This attack was ſo ſharp and well fought that, about four in the afternoon, the town was taken, and the troops of the lord d'Anghien entered it through the gates, which had been deſtroyed.

When the inhabitants ſaw their town was loſt without hope of recovery, all that could eſcape

did ſo through thoſe gates where there were no enemies; but few were ſo fortunate. The ſlaughter was very great of men, women and children, for to none was ſhewn mercy. There were upwards of five hundred of the inhabitants killed, and numbers of old people and women burnt in their beds, which was much to be lamented.

The town was ſet on fire at more than two hundred places, which reduced the whole to aſhes, churches and all: nothing remained entire.

Thus did Grammont ſuffer by fire and flame; and the lord d'Anghien, after this exploit, returned to the army before Ghent. The earl of Flanders was much pleaſed when he heard it, and ſaid; 'Fair ſon, you are a valiant man, and, if it pleaſe God, will be a gallant knight, for you have made a handſome commencement.'

During this deſtruction of Grammont, which happened on a Sunday in the month of June, the ſiege of Ghent ſtill continued. The lord d'Anghien, whoſe name was Walter, was there, but never reſted long in his quarters: he was every day out in ſearch of adventures, at times well accompanied, at others ſo thinly that he was unable to proſecute his plans. Some adventures, however, daily befel him on the Haze of Flanders.

One Thurſday morning the lord d'Anghien left his quarters, in company with the lord de Montigny, ſir Michael de la Hameide his couſin, his brother the baſtard d'Anghien, Julien de Toiſſon, Hutin Donay, and ſeveral more of his houſehold, in order to ſkirmiſh before Ghent as they had formerly

formerly done: they this time advanced ſo far that they ſuffered for it, for thoſe of Ghent had placed in ambuſcade more than two hundred men beyond the walls of the town. They were armed with long pikes. Some ſaid, this ambuſcade was formed of the greater part of thoſe who had fled from Grammont, in the hope of ſurrounding and making priſoner the lord d'Anghien, in revenge for the miſchief he had done them. They knew him to be young, courageous and apt to venture himſelf fooliſhly, which gave them hopes of the ſucceſs they had. It was unfortunate for him, as well as for thoſe who accompanied him.

The lord d'Anghien and his company were quite off their guard when they found themſelves ſurrounded by the Ghent men, who advanced boldly up, crying out, 'Surrender, or you are all dead men:' The lord d'Anghien, perceiving his ſituation, aſked advice from the lord de Montigny, who was beſide him: he replied,—'Sir, it is too late: let us defend ourſelves, and ſell our lives as dearly as we can: there is nothing elſe to do, and we have not a moment for delay.'

The knights then made the ſign of the croſs, and recommending themſelves to God and St. George, daſhed among their enemies; for they could noways retreat, being in the midſt of their ambuſcade. They behaved very gallantly, and did every thing that could be done in arms; but they were out-numbered by their opponents, who, having long pikes, gave ſuch ſtrokes as were but too mortal, as the event ſhewed.

The

The lord d'Anghien was ſlain; as were the baſtard d'Anghien his brother, and Julien de Toiſſon by his ſide. Other valiant knights from Hainault, ſuch as the lords de Montigny and de St. Chriſtopher, ſuffered ſimilar fates. Sir Michael de la Hameide was feverely wounded, and would certainly have loſt his life, if Hutin Donay had not ſaved him by dint of arms and prudence: he had great difficulty in doing it.

While the Flemings were employed in pillaging and diſarming theſe knights, to convey them into Ghent, where it was known they had ſlain the lord d'Anghien, which gave them great joy, Hutin Donay, ſeeing no hopes of ſuccour, carried ſir Michael de la Hameide out of the crowd and danger. Such was the end of this unfortunate day to the lord d'Anghien. You may well ſuppoſe the earl of Flanders was much grieved at it: indeed, he ſhewed it plainly; for, out of his affection to him, he raiſed the ſiege of Ghent. The earl could not forget him, but regretted his loſs, ſaying,—'Ah, Walter, Walter, my fair ſon, how unfortunate haſt thou been, to be thus cut off in thy youth. I wiſh every one to know, that the Ghent men ſhall never have peace with me until I have greatly revenged myſelf.'

Things remained in this ſituation, when he ſent to demand the body of the lord d'Anghien, which they had carried into Ghent to pleaſe the town; but they refuſed to deliver it up until they ſhould be paid a thouſand francs in hard caſh. They divided this booty between them,

them, when the body was conveyed to the army, and from thence to Anghien, of which town he was the lord.

CHAP. II.

THE EARL OF FLANDERS RAISES THE SIEGE OF GHENT.—TWO RICH CITIZENS, DESIROUS OF NEGOTIATING A PEACE BETWEEN THE EARL AND THE TOWN, ARE PUT TO DEATH BY PETER DU BOIS AND PHILIP VON ARTAVELD.

OUT of affection to the lord d'Anghien, the ſiege of Ghent was raiſed, and the earl returned to Bruges. He then diſmiſſed his army, ordering it to the different garriſons in Flanders, and to the caſtles of Gavre, Oudenarde, Dendremonde, Courtray, and every place near to Ghent. The earl requeſted the Liegeois not to continue ſending ſtores and proviſion to Ghent as they had done.

The men of Liege returned a haughty anſwer to the meſſengers, ſaying they would conſult with thoſe of St. Tron, Huy and Dinant, how to act.

The earl ſent to his couſins the duke of Brabant and duke Albert, and to the bailiffs of Hainault, Holland and Zealand, ſpecial ambaſſadors, choſen from among his principal counſellors, to remonſtrate with them touching the conduct

conduct of the town of Ghent, which ſtill continued in its rebellion, chiefly owing to the proviſion and ſtores which it received from their countries, and to requeſt that a ſtop might be put to it.

Theſe two lords would have been very ſorry to do any thing which might diſpleaſe the earl: they excuſed themſelves handſomely, ſaying, that until that moment they were ignorant of it, but that henceforward they would iſſue ſuch orders that it ſhould be diſcontinued. This anſwer was agreeable to the earl of Flanders.

Duke Albert, who at that time reſided in Holland, wrote to his bailiff in Hainault, ſir Simon de Lalain, incloſing him a copy of the letter from the earl of Flanders, adding his poſitive commands againſt any proviſion or ſtores being furniſhed Ghent from Hainault, or any other thing to be done which might diſpleaſe his couſin the earl, under pain of his higheſt diſpleaſure.

The bailiff iſſued a proclamation through Hainault, forbidding any proviſions to be carried to Ghent. A ſimilar proclamation was made in Brabant; ſo that none dared to go to Ghent but privately, which much ſurpriſed the inhabitants; for proviſion began to be very ſcarce, and there would have been a famine, if the Hollanders had not aſſiſted them, an act of friendſhip which they would not be reſtrained from doing by any injunctions that duke Albert could lay on them.

About this period, through the means of the councils of Brabant, Hainault and Liege, there was a great aſſembly appointed to be holden at Harle-

Harlebecque, near Courtray: the men of Ghent ſent thither twelve of their principal inhabitants, who had in general ſhewn themſelves deſirous of peace, whatever it might coſt them from the populace that fought only confuſion.

All the magiſtrates of the chief towns in Flanders were at Harlebecque, even the earl himſelf; and there were ſome alſo from Liege, Hainault and Brabant. Matters were ſo ably conducted, that the deputies from Ghent returned home with propoſitions for a peace. It happened that thoſe inhabitants who wiſhed for an end of the war, namely, the prudent and quiet ones, went to the houſes of the deputies who had been at this conference, and who were two of the richeſt and moſt peaceable citizens, ſuch as ſir Guiſebert Gente and ſir Symon Bete, and aſked them what news they had brought. They diſcovered themſelves too ſoon; for they replied, 'Good people, we ſhall have, if it pleaſe God, an excellent peace for thoſe who are well inclined and wiſh for quiet; and ſome of the wicked ones in the town will be puniſhed.'

It is commonly ſaid, if there be thoſe who talk, there are thoſe who act. Peter du Bois, not thinking his life in ſafety, had ſpies every where to give him intelligence. Some of them brought him the reports of the town, reſpecting a peace, and aſſured him the words came from ſir Guiſebert Gente and ſir Symon Bete. Peter, on hearing this, was like a madman, and, applying them to himſelf, ſaid,—'If any are to be puniſhed for this war, I ſhall not be one of the laſt;

laſt; but it ſhall not go thus. Our gentlemen who have been at the conference may think what they will, but I have no deſire to die yet. The war has not laſted half ſo long as I intend it ſhall; and my good maſters, John Lyon and William Craffort, have not hitherto been ſufficiently avenged. If the affairs be now in confuſion, I will trouble them ſtill more.'

Peter du Bois was as good as his word, and I will ſhew how. That ſame evening, the morrow of which the council were to meet in the council-chamber, to hear the report of the deputies, he came to the houſe of Philip von Artaveld, and found him muſing and thoughtful, leaning againſt a window of his apartment. The firſt word he uttered was, 'Philip, have you heard any news?' 'None,' replied Philip, 'except that our deputies are returned from the conference at Harlebecque, and that to-morrow we are to hear in the council-chamber, what they have done.' 'That is true,' anſwered Peter; 'but I know what they have done, and the terms of the treaty; for they have opened themſelves to ſome of my friends. Be aſſured, Philip, that our heads will pay for all the treaties they make, or have made; for there will not be any peace between my lord and the town, but that you, the lord de Harzelles, myſelf, and all the captains our allies in this war, will be firſt put to death, and the rich citizens pardoned. They wiſh to free themſelves by delivering us up; and this was the opinion of John Lyon, my maſter. Beſides, the earl, our lord, has his baſe flatterers

flatterers always with him; ſuch as Gilbert Matthew and his brothers, the provoſt of Harlebecque who is their relation, and the deacon of ſmall crafts who fled away with them. It therefore behoves us to conſider awhile on this buſineſs.'

'How ſhall we act?' aſked Philip. 'I will tell you,' replied Peter: 'we muſt ſend orders to all our leaders and captains, to be ready armed, and in the market-place, to-morrow, and to keep near us; when we will enter the council-chamber, with a hundred of our men, to hear the treaty read. Leave me to manage the reſt; but only avow what I ſhall ſay; for whoever wiſhes to preſerve his life and power with the commonalty, if he do not make himſelf feared, does nothing.' Philip willingly aſſented; and then Peter du Bois, taking his leave, departed. He inſtantly ſent his ſervants and ſcouts to the different captains under him, to order them and their men to be in the market-place on the next day, well armed, to hear the news. They all obeyed, for none dared to refuſe, and were ready for any miſchief.

The enſuing morning, at nine o'clock, the mayor, ſheriffs, and rich men of the city, came to the market-place and entered the town-hall: then came thoſe who had been at the conferences at Harlebecque; and laſt came Peter du Bois and Philip von Artaveld, well attended by thoſe of their party.

When they were all aſſembled and ſeated, for every one who choſe it ſat down, they found the lord de Harzelles was not preſent: they ſent to him,

him, but he excuſed himſelf by ſaying he could not come, for he was unwell: 'Proceed,' cried out Peter du Bois: 'I will anſwer for him, and we are full enough: let us hear what theſe gentlemen have brought from the conferences at Harlebecque.'

Upon this, Guiſebert Gente and Symon Bete roſe up, as being the principal deputies; when one of them ſpoke thus,—'Gentlemen of Ghent, we have attended the conferences at Harlebecque; and we have had much labour and difficulty, in conjunction with the good men of Brabant, Liege and Hainault, in making up our diſputes with the earl our lord. However, at the entreaty of the duke and duchefs of Brabant, who had ſent thither their council, as well as duke Albert, the good town of Ghent is at peace with the earl, on condition that two hundred men at arms, whoſe names he will ſend within fifteen days in writing, ſhall ſurrender themſelves to his priſon in the caſtle of Lille, to his pure will: he is ſo noble and generous that he will ſhew them mercy and pardon.'

At theſe words, Peter du Bois advanced, and ſaid,—'Guiſebert, how have you dared to enter into any treaty that ſhould put two hundred men at arms into any of the enemy's priſons? Ghent would be indeed diſgraced, and better would it be for it, if completely overturned, than to be reproached for having ſo ſcandalouſly concluded the war. We know well among ourſelves, and underſtand that neither you nor Symon Bete will be of the two hundred. You have

have made your own choice; but we ſhall carve and cut out for ourſelves. Advance, Philip, on theſe traitors, who want to betray and diſhonour the town of Ghent.'

On ſaying this, Peter du Bois drew his dagger, and, coming up to Guiſebert, ſtruck him on the belly and knocked him down dead. Philip drew alſo his dagger, and with it ſtruck Symon Bete and ſlew him. They then began to cry out 'Treaſon, treaſon!' They had their partiſans all round about them, ſo that many of the richeſt and greateſt men in the town diſſembled, to ſave their lives. At that time only thoſe two were killed; but to ſatisfy the people, and to turn the affair to their advantage, they ſent their ſcouts to cry through the town, that Guiſebert and ſir Symon Bete, like falſe traitors, wanted to betray the good town of Ghent. Thus the matter ended: the dead were dead; and no one was called to any account for it, nor any penalty exacted.

When the earl of Flanders, who was at Bruges, heard of this, he was ſorely enraged, and ſaid,—'At the entreaties of my couſins of Brabant and Hainault, I too eaſily acceded to their wiſhes of making peace with Ghent, and more than once have they, in return, thus acted: but I will have them know, they ſhall never have peace, until I have had given up to me ſuch a number of the inhabitants as will ſatisfy me.'

In this manner were ſlain two valiant and rich men in the town of Ghent, for having acted according to the intentions of many of their fellow-

citizens.

citizens. Each of them had for his patrimony two thouſand francs of yearly revenue. They were much pitied in ſecret; but no one dared to do ſo publicly, unleſs he wiſhed to loſe his life.

Things remained in this ſtate, and the war was more bitter than before. The garriſons round Ghent were night and day in the field, ſo that no proviſion could enter the town. The Brabanters and Hainaulters were afraid of venturing themſelves; for, whenever they were met by the earl's men, the beſt that could befal them was the ſlaughter of their horſes, ſending them priſoners to Dendremonde or to Oudenarde, or making them pay ranſom. By theſe means, the victuallers were afraid to riſk bringing ſupplies to the town.

CHAP. III.

AN INSURRECTION IN PARIS, ON ACCOUNT OF THE INTENDED TAXES.—THE LORD DE COUCY APPEASES IT.—THE DUKE OF ANJOU MAKES PREPARATIONS FOR HIS JOURNEY TO NAPLES.

AT this period, the Pariſians roſe up in rebellion againſt the king and his council, becauſe they wanted to introduce generally through the kingdom thoſe taxes, impoſitions and exciſes which had been raiſed during the reign of king Charles, father of the preſent king. The Pariſians oppoſed them, by ſaying, the king of happy memory had acquitted them from theſe payments during his lifetime, and that the preſent king had confirmed this grant at his coronation

nation at Rheims. The young king and his council quitted Paris, and went to reſide at Meaux in Brie.

No ſooner had the king left Paris than the inhabitants roſe, and, having armed themſelves, ſlew all who had been aſſiſting in propoſing or collecting theſe taxes. They broke into the priſons and different houſes in the town, taking whatever they could find. They went to the palace of the biſhop of Paris, and, having broken open his priſons, ſet at liberty Hugh Aubriot*, who had been governor-general of the police during king Charles's reign, and had been condemned to the dungeons for ſeveral bad actions which he had done or conſented to, many of which were deſerving the ſtake: to this man the mob gave liberty, which he owed ſolely to their inſurrection. He immediately ſet out from Paris, for fear of being retaken, and went into Burgundy, whence he came, and related to his friends his adventures.

The Pariſians, during their rebellion, committed many outrages; but fortunately it was not general: had it been ſo, affairs would have been bad indeed. The king reſided all this time at Meaux, attended by his uncles of Anjou, Berry and Burgundy, who were much

* Hugh Aubriot had the management of the finances under Charles V. He built the Baſtille as a fort againſt the Engliſh. He owed his diſgrace and impriſonment to the clergy, who accuſed him of hereſy, &c.: he was ſhut up between four walls: but the Orleans party hated him becauſe, being a Burgundian, he was attached to the duke of Burgundy.

alarmed

alarmed and vexed at this rebellion. They resolved to send the lord de Coucy, who was a prudent knight, to treat with and endeavour to appeaſe them; for he knew better how to manage them than any other.

The lord de Coucy, whoſe name was Enguerrand, came to Paris ſimply attended by his houſehold. He diſmounted at his hôtel, and ſent for thoſe who had been the moſt active, and remonſtrated with them wiſely and prudently on the wickedneſs of their conduct in killing the officers and miniſters of the king, in breaking open his priſons, and ſetting thoſe who were confined in them at liberty; for all which, if the king willed it, they would dearly pay. But this he was not deſirous of doing; for the king much loved the town of Paris, becauſe he had been born in it, and alſo from its being the capital of his kingdom: he was therefore unwilling to deſtroy its well-intentioned inhabitants.

He told them, his reaſons for coming to Paris were to endeavour to make up matters between them, and that he would entreat the king and his uncles mercifully to pardon them their evil deeds. They anſwered, that they wiſhed not any harm to the king their lord, nor to make war againſt him, but that theſe taxes ſhould be repealed as far as related to Paris: and that, when exempted from ſuch, they would aſſiſt the king in any other manner. 'In what manner?' demanded the lord de Coucy. 'We will pay certain ſums into the hands of a proper receiver every week, to act with the other cities and towns in France in the payment

of

of the ſoldiers and men at arms.' 'And what ſum are you willing to pay weekly?' Such a ſum,' replied the Pariſians, 'as we ſhall agree upon.'

The lord de Coucy managed them ſo well, by handſome ſpeeches, that they conſented to tax themſelves, and pay weekly into the hands of a receiver whom they would appoint ten thouſand francs. Upon this, the lord de Coucy left them and returned to Meaux in Brie, to lay before the king and his uncles the propoſitions they had made.

The king was adviſed to accept this offer of the Pariſians, as the beſt thing he could do; for from this beginning, though ſmall, all the other towns would follow the example, and when times ſhould alter they might then change their meaſures.

The lord de Coucy returned to Paris, and brought with him the king's pardon to the Pariſians, on condition of their obſerving the propoſitions they had made. This they promiſed, and appointed a receiver, to whom was paid, every week, the fixed ſum in florins; but it was not to be carried from Paris, except for the payment of thoſe men at arms who ſhould be in actual ſervice, and neither the king nor his uncles were to have any concern with it, nor was it to be otherwiſe employed.

Affairs remained thus for ſome little time, and the Pariſians were quiet: but the king did not return to Paris, which much diſpleaſed the inhabitants.

Rouen likewiſe was in a ſtate of rebellion, and

from the ſame cauſe: the populace roſe, killed the king's governor and all thoſe who had any concern in the collecting or valuing theſe taxes. The king, on hearing this, during his reſidence at Meaux, was much angered, and his council were doubtful if all the other towns would not follow this example. The king was adviſed to march to Rouen, which he did, and appeaſed the commonalty, who were very riotous. He alſo pardoned them the death of the governor, and whatever elſe they had done. They appointed a receiver from among themſelves, to whom they were to pay a certain ſum in florins every week; and, on this being ſettled, they continued quiet.

Now remark the great evils that were beginning to diſturb France: all took riſe from the conduct of the men of Ghent; for the common people ſaid every where publicly, they were good men, who ſo valiantly maintained their liberties, and for which they ought to be loved and honoured by the whole world.

We will return to the duke of Anjou, who had a great deſire to viſit the kingdom of Naples, of which he ſigned himſelf king, as well as of Sicily, and duke of la Puglia and Calabria; for pope Clement had inveſted him with them, by virtue of the deeds which the queen of Naples had given to him.

The duke of Anjou was prudent, of a warm imagination, bold and enterpriſing: he plainly perceived, that according to the eſtabliſhment he had ſupported hitherto, and which he would have been ſorry to have ſeen leſſened, he would

be

be a poor lord in France, unleſs he ſhould conquer ſuch rich and noble heritages as the two kingdoms of Naples and Sicily, and the duchies of la Puglia, Calabria, as well as the county of Provence. They would come to him very opportunely; for thoſe counties, of which he called himſelf lord by virtue of the gift made him, abounded in all ſorts of wealth. He was therefore occupied day and night in deviſing means to perform this journey: he well knew he could never accompliſh it without a large ſum of money, and a numerous body of men at arms to reſiſt thoſe who might wiſh to oppoſe him. The duke, in conſequence, amaſſed ſo great a quantity of money, under pretence of this journey, that it was marvellous to behold; and he kept the Pariſians in as good humour as he could, for he knew there were in Paris large depoſits of caſh, of which he got the greater part, and ſent it to the earl of Savoy, in whom he had great confidence; adding, that on his arrival in Savoy, he would make arrangements by which there ſhould be regular payments for a thouſand ſpears, or more, for one whole year.

The earl of Savoy was much pleaſed at this intelligence, for he greatly loved arms: he therefore replied to the meſſengers, that he would willingly ſerve the duke on the terms propoſed. This anſwer was highly agreeable to the duke, as he had an affection for the company of the earl of Savoy.

The duke retained men in all parts, ſo that he had collected full nine thouſand men at arms,

ready prepared and under his obedience. He ordered the moſt ſumptuous equipages to be made for him and his houſehold at Paris that any lord had ever commanded, ſuch as tents, pavilions and other things ſuitable for a king when about to make a long journey.

We will now leave the duke of Anjou, and ſpeak of the earl of Cambridge and his men, who were in Portugal near the king's perſon.

CHAP. IV.

THE ENGLISH MAKE AN EXPEDITION AGAINST THE SPANIARDS, CONTRARY TO THE ORDERS OF THE KING OF PORTUGAL.—THE CASTLE OF FIGHIERE * IS TAKEN.

THE earl of Cambridge and his army remained for a conſiderable time with the king of Portugal at Liſbon; during which the Engliſh and Gaſcons reconnoitred the country, for they had never before been there. It ſeems to me, that about this time a marriage was agreed on between the daughter of the king of Portugal, who was ten years old, and the ſon of the earl of Cambridge, of the ſame age. He was a fine child, and his name was John; the lady's name Beatrice.

There were great feaſts at the betrothing of theſe two children, and much joy; all the barons and prelates of the realm were preſent; and, young as

* This muſt probably mean Figueiro dos Vinhos, a town in Eſtremadura, for Figuera is in Catalonia.

the

the married couple were, they were both laid in the ſame bed. This marriage and the conſequent feaſts being over, which laſted for eight days, the council of Portugal ordered the men at arms who were in Liſbon to march to other quarters on the frontiers. The earl of Cambridge and a part of his army were ſent into quarters at a very handſome town in Portugal called Eſtremoure*, and the remainder of the Engliſh and Gaſcons to Beſiouſe†. John of Cambridge remained with the king.

When the canon de Roberſac, and the Engliſh and Gaſcon knights, took leave of the king, he ſaid to them,—'My friends, I order you not to make any attacks on the enemy without my knowledge; for, if you do, I ſhall be much angered.' They ſwore, 'they would not, by God, and, whenever they had ſuch an inclination, would ſend to inform him, and have his permiſſion.'

They then departed and marched towards Beſiouſe, which is ſituated in the upper part of the country, two days journey from Liſbon and as many from Seville, where the king of Spain reſided.

The king of Spain had been early informed of the arrival of the Engliſh under the command of the earl of Cambridge, and had ſent intelligence of it to thoſe knights in France on whoſe ſervices

* Eſtremoure. Q. if not Eſtremoz.

† Beſiouse. Q. if not Villa Viciosa, a town near Eſtremoz; for D. Sauvage, in a marginal note, ſays la Salle calls it Veſiouse, which ſeems a corruption of Vicioſa, and confirms me it muſt be Villa Vicioſa.

he

he depended. On hearing this, and that there were expectations of war in Spain, they were much rejoiced: many who wiſhed to advance their fame made ready, and took the road thither.

The canon de Roberſac*, who was with his Engliſh and Gaſcon companions in Beſiouſe, one day ſaid; 'My dear gentlemen, I think we remain here not much to our honour, when we have never as yet made any attempt on our enemies: they will not think the better of us for it. If you will take my advice, let us ſend to entreat the king to allow us to attack them.' They all replied, 'We are perfectly willing to do ſo.'

Sir John Canbouich† was ordered to carry this meſſage, which he cheerfully undertook. He came to the king at Liſbon, where he punctually delivered his meſſage. The king replied, he was unwilling for them to undertake any expedition; and, whatever the knight might urge he could never make him change his opinion. He returned, therefore, to his friends, telling them the king would not comply with their requeſt. They were much enraged at it, and ſaid among themſelves, that it was not becoming men at arms to continue ſo long in garriſon without attempting ſome feats of arms; they mutually agreed to make an excurſion. In conſequence, they took

* The canon de Roberſac's name was Theodore. He was governor of Ardres in the 45th of Edward III. and, in the 3d of Richard II. was employed by the king to treat with the duke of Juliers concerning his homage. *Cartes Rolles Françoiſe.*

† Canbouich. Q.

the

the field with full four hundred men at arms and as many archers. They reſolved to attack a large town which belonged to the commander of St. James; but, on their march, they found a nearer way to arrive at the caſtle of Fighiere, in which were about ſixty Spaniſh men at arms in garriſon, under the command of Peter Gouſſes and his brother.

The canon de Roberſac, being very proud of this expedition, as it had been by his means undertaken, rode forward in front. There were ſir Oliver Beauchamp, ſir Mathew Gournay, Miles Windſor, the lord Talbot, ſir Adam Symon, ſir John Sounder, baſtard brother to the king of England, the ſouldich de l'Eſtrade, the lord de Châteauneuf, the lord de la Barde, Raymond de Maſſon and ſeveral more. They arrived at the caſtle of Fighiere, which they ſurrounded, and drew up in order of aſſault, making all preparations neceſſary for it.

When the garriſon ſaw they were to be attacked, they alſo made ready for their defence. About four o'clock in the morning, a very vigorous attack commenced, and the Engliſh entered the ditch, which being dry, they advanced cloſe to the walls, bracing their targets over their heads, to guard themſelves from the ſtones which might be thrown on them from the walls, and there made good uſe of their pick-axes and iron crows: while thus employed, the garriſon threw on them beams and bars of iron, that wounded many.

The canon de Roberſac was preſent: he had the courage of a knight, and performed that day

many

many gallant deeds; as did alſo Eſperons his valet. The archers of England were drawn up on the ditches, who ſhot ſo well and rapidly that ſcarcely any dared to ſhew themſelves on the battlements; and one half of the garriſon were either ſlain or wounded.

The brother of Peter Gouſſes, the governor of the caſtle, was there ſlain by an arrow; he was called Bartholomew, and was an able and expert man at arms; but, through his own imprudence and raſhneſs, he loſt his life.

The aſſault continued from four o'clock until high noon; and I muſt ſay that the Engliſh and Gaſcon knights did not ſpare themſelves, but fought with courage and a thorough good will, becauſe they had undertaken this expedition without the conſent of the king of Portugal: they were, therefore, determined to conquer this caſtle, that the fame of it might reach Liſbon, and ſhew what ſucceſs they had met with on their firſt attempt.

The canon de Roberſac ſaid,—'Ha, ha, my gentlemen, we ſhall this day win the caſtle; but if ſo many gallant men at arms as we are, take as much time to conquer all the other towns in Spain and in Gallicia, we ſhall never be maſters of them.'

The knights and ſquires, on hearing this ſpeech, began to exert themſelves the more: the canon de Roberſac, although covered by his ſhield, received ſuch a blow that he was much wounded.

There was preſent a young knight from Hainault called Froiſſart Meulier, who very gallantly

lantly behaved himſelf at this aſſault, as indeed did the others.

The garriſon artillery, as well as the machines for caſting of ſtones and iron bars, began to tire and grow weaker in the caſtle. Conſidering that of twenty-five men* (the force within the place), there were not three unhurt, and ſome dangerouſly wounded, they could not prevent it from being taken by ſtorm. The brother of their captain lay dead, from whom no further help could come. They reſolved to give themſelves a little reſpite, and during that time treat for a peace. They made a ſignal to parley with the Engliſh. The aſſault was ſtopped, and thoſe who were in the ditches employed againſt the walls were ordered out: it was high time, for there were many who had been wounded, and others much fatigued.

Sir Matthew Gournay, conſtable, and ſir William Windſor, marſhal of the army, advanced, and demanded what they wanted. The governor, Peter Gouſſes, addreſſed them in theſe words,—'You are reſolved not to leave this place without conquering it: you wound our men, and we do the ſame to yours. We have therefore conſulted together; and I, as governor, ſpeak their ſentiments, which are, that we will ſurrender to you the fort, our lives and fortunes being ſpared. Accept, therefore, theſe terms, which are juſt: you are at preſent the ſtrongeſt, ſo that we muſt ſubmit.'

* Page 23, it is ſaid the garriſon conſiſted of about ſixty men at arms.

The

The Engliſh knights replied, they would adviſe upon it, which they did. When they had held a council, they ſent for anſwer to the garriſon, that thoſe within the caſtle might retire whither they pleaſed; but the ſtores muſt be left behind, and they were not to carry away any thing with them.

When Peter Gouſſes ſaw he could not obtain better terms, he conſented, but it was much againſt his will. Thus was the caſtle of Fighiere ſurrendered to the Engliſh. The Spaniards marched away, under a ſafe conduct, to Eſteris, where the commander of St. James uſually reſided. They, however, did not find him there; for, having learnt that the enemy had taken the field, he had done the ſame with full four hundred men at arms, Spaniards and Caſtillians, in hopes, if he could meet with the Engliſh in a favourable ſituation, to combat them to his honour.

CHAP. V.

AFTER THE CONQUEST OF THE CASTLE OF FIGHIERE, THE CANON DE ROBERSAC, RETURNING TO HIS GARRISON, IS IN GREAT DANGER.—SUCCOURS COME FROM FRANCE TO CASTILLE.

WHEN the knights of England and the canon had got poſſeſſion of the caſtle of Fighiere, they were much rejoiced. They had it

it repaired in every part: and leaving forty men at arms as a garriſon, they ſtored it well with proviſions and other neceſſaries, and alſo with a ſufficient body of archers. Having placed a good captain as governor, they held a council, when they reſolved to return to their quarters.

The Engliſh and Gaſcons, on their departure, divided themſelves into three bodies; the laſt of which remained in the plain, under the command of the canon. Some Engliſh, Gaſcons, and Germans, deſirous of feats of arms, had continued with him: in all about ſixty ſpears and as many archers: they marched one whole day with the canon's company on their return to Beſiouſe.

On the ſecond day, early in the morning, they diſcovered ſome ambuſcades, and marched on in good array. They were then between a large town in Portugal, called Huenca*, and the caſtle of Concrelet†. On the outſkirts of a wood, nearer to the caſtle of Concrelet than to Huenca, was the grand maſter of St. James‡ poſted with full four hundred men at arms. The Engliſh no ſooner perceived them than they cloſed their ranks, ſhewed no ſigns of fear, and marched on at a good pace.

The Spaniards, notwithſtanding their num-

* Huenca. Q. † Concrelet. Q.

‡ I ſuſpect it muſt have been the grand maſter of the order of Alcantara, and not of St. James, and that there muſt have been a caſtle of Fighiere in the province of Eſtremadura; for it is not poſſible, from the ſhortneſs of their march, they could have gone to Catalonia. See note, p. 20.

bers,

bers, made not any appearance of quitting their ambuſcade; for they imagined the Engliſh had near at hand their large battalion, and for that reaſon were afraid to attack them: had they been better informed, there would have been a combat. They thus ſeparated from each other without any thing being done.

The Spaniards returned that evening to Eſteris, and the canon to Beſiouſe, when he related to his companions how he had ſeen the Spaniards in ambuſcade between Huenca and Concrelet, adding, 'If we had been all together, we could have fought with them.' The knights, therefore, much repented that they had not kept all in one body.

Thus ended this excurſion of the Engliſh and Gaſcons; and when news was brought of it to the king of Portugal, he pretended to be much enraged, becauſe they had done it without his conſent. The English and Gaſcons remained the whole winter in their garriſons, without performing any thing worth mentioning, which wearied them much: it was not their fault no deeds of arms were done.

Don John of Caſtille, however, was not idle in making his preparations. He had ſent to the king of France and to his uncles for ſuccour, and had informed them of the arrival of the earl of Cambridge in Portugal. He alſo ſaid, that it was univerſally reported throughout Caſtille and Portugal that the king of England, the duke of Lancaſter, and the earl of Buckingham, with

with a powerful force, were to reinforce them the enſuing ſummer. For which reaſons, he required from the king, in conformity with the treaties between France and Spain, and their mutual affection, that ſufficient forces ſhould be ſent to him in the courſe of the ſpring and ſummer, to enable him to oppoſe his enemies with effect. The king's council aſſented to this, for they clearly ſaw the king of Spain had a right to demand it. Permiſſion was granted to all knights and ſquires deſirous of advancing themſelves to join don John: and the king of France lent them wherewith to perform their journey. It ſeems to me, that ſir Oliver du Gueſclin, brother to the late conſtable of France, made preparations to go thither in the ſpring. Many knights and ſquires from Brittany, Beauce, Picardy, Anjou, Berry, Blois and Maine did ſo likewiſe, and went thither in companies to perform the journey more comfortably. A paſſage was open to them through Arragon, and all kinds of proviſion were prepared for them, for ready money. But you muſt know they did not pay for all they took in the low countries, which made the poor inhabitants ſuffer great loſſes.

CHAP. VI.

THE EMPEROR WINCESLAUS SENDS HIS SISTER ANNE TO KING RICHARD OF ENGLAND, WHO MAKES HER HIS QUEEN.

YOU have heard how king Richard of England had for upwards of a year been in treaty with Winceſlaus king of Bohemia, who at this period had taken the title of emperor of Rome, to obtain his ſiſter the lady Anne in marriage; and how one of his knights, ſir Simon Burnley, had much laboured in this buſineſs; and alſo that the duke of Saxony had been in England to confirm the marriage.

This affair had been ſo well conducted that the emperor ſent his ſiſter to England, attended by the duke of Saxony and great numbers of knights and damſels, with a ſuitable ſtate becoming ſuch a lady. They came through Brabant to Bruſſels, where the duke and ducheſs received the young queen and her company very grandly; for the duke was her uncle, ſhe being the daughter of the emperor Charles his brother. The lady Anne of Bohemia remained with her uncle and aunt at Bruſſels upwards of a month. She was afraid of moving, for ſhe had been informed there were twelve large armed veſſels, full of Normans, on the ſea between Calais and Holland, that ſeized and pillaged all that fell into their hands, and it was indifferent to them who they were. The report was current, that they cruiz-

ed

ed in thoſe ſeas waiting for the coming of this lady; and that the king of France and his council were deſirous of carrying her off, in order to break the match, for they were very uneaſy at this alliance of the Germans with the Engliſh. When it was ſaid to be diſhonourable to carry off ladies in the wars of men, they replied,—'How, have you not ſeen the prince of Wales, father to the preſent king of England, conſent to a ſimilar action in the perſon of the ducheſs of Bourbon, mother to the queen of France, when ſhe was made priſoner by the ſoldiers of the prince, ſhut up in the caſtle of Belleperche, and afterwards conducted into Guyenne and ranſomed? If, therefore, to revenge themſelves, the French ſhould commit ſuch an act on the intended queen of England, they ought not to be blamed for it.' On account of theſe ſuſpicions and fears, the young lady remained in Bruſſels one whole month. The duke of Brabant, by advice of his council, ſent to France the lords de Rouſſelans and de Bouſquehoir, to remonſtrate on this ſubject with the king and his uncles, who were alſo his nephews, being his ſiſter's ſons.

The knights of Brabant managed ſo well with the king and his council that their requeſt was complied with, and paſſports granted for the lady and her attendants to travel through any parts of France ſhe might chooſe, as far as Calais. The Normans were remanded into port. This anſwer the knights carried to Brabant to the duke and ducheſs. The king and his uncles

wrote

wrote to ſay, they had granted this favour to their couſin the lady Anne, at their ſolicitation alone, and for no other reaſon whatever.

Such information was very pleaſing to the duke and ducheſs of Brabant, as well as to thoſe who were to croſs the ſea. Preparations were immediately made for their departure from Bruſſels; and the young lady took leave of her uncle, her aunt, and the ladies and damſels of the country who had accompanied her.

The duke had her eſcorted with one hundred ſpears. She paſſed through Ghent, where she repoſed herſelf for a day, and the citizens did every thing in their power to ſhew her honour. She then came to Bruges, where the earl of Flanders received her very magnificently, and ſtopped for three days. She continued her journey until ſhe came to Gravelines, where the earls of Saliſbury and Devonshire were waiting for her, with five hundred ſpears and as many archers. They conducted her to Calais, when the Brabanters returned, after they had delivered her to the barons of England.

The young lady made no ſtay at Calais but until the wind became favourable. She embarked on a Wedneſday morning when the veſſels were manned, and the ſame day arrived at Dover, where she halted to repoſe herſelf two days: on the third, she ſet out for Canterbury, where the earl of Buckingham received her very grandly. The lady purſued her journey unto London, and was moſt honourably received by the citizens, the ladies and damſels

damſels of the town and country, who were all aſſembled to meet her. She was married to the king, in the chapel of the palace of Weſtminſter, the twentieth day after Chriſtmas. On the wedding day, there were great feaſtings. That gallant and noble knight ſir Robert de Namur had always accompanied her, from the time ſhe quitted Germany until ſhe was married, for which the emperor and king of England held themſelves much obliged.

The king carried his queen to Windſor, where he kept an open and noble houſe. They were very happy together. She was accompanied by the princeſs of Wales and the ducheſs of Brittany, aunt to the king, who at that time was ſeparated from the duke her huſband; for the barons and council of England would not conſent to her return into Brittany, becauſe he had changed to the French intereſt.

The barons and knights were accuſtomed to ſay,—'Since the duke of Brittany has ſo ill and ſo treacherouſly acquitted himſelf to the earl of Buckingham, and to our men, the laſt time they were in France, whenever he ſhall demand back his ducheſs, let us not conſent to it, but ſend him his two enemies, John and Guy of Brittany, children to St. Charles de Blois, and who have a better right to the duchy than himſelf: he is duke through our power, and an ungrateful return does he make for what he has had from us: we ought therefore to act in like manner to him, for his diſgraceful conduct.' True it is, that theſe two lords, John

and Guy de Bretaigne, ſons of St. Charles of Blois, who were priſoners in England, and confined in a ſtrong caſtle, under the guard of ſir Peter d'Ambreticourt, were ſent for, and brought before the council of the king of England; when they were informed, that if they would hold the duchy of Brittany from England, and acknowledge it by doing homage to the king, their inheritance ſhould be recovered for them, and John ſhould have the lady Philippa of Lancaſter to wife.

But they replied, they would not have any thing to do with it, and would prefer remaining in priſon until death to acting otherwiſe than as good Frenchmen. Affairs continued on this footing, and they were never afterwards in any way ſpoken to on the ſubject, ſince they had ſhewn the firmneſs of their intentions.

CHAP. VII.

THE KING OF FRANCE CANNOT OBTAIN MONEY FROM THE RECEIVER AT PARIS.—THE DUKE OF ANJOU MARCHES UNTO ITALY WITH A NOBLE ATTENDANCE OF KNIGHTS.

YOU have before heard how Paris had made its peace with the king, on its agreement of paying a certain ſum of florins. The florins were paid weekly to a receiver whom they had appointed, but none came to the coffers of the king, nor were any of them ſent out of Paris.

It

It happened that the king was in great want of money to pay the men at arms he was ſending to Caſtille which by treaty he was bound to do.

He ordered the receiver at Paris to prepare a ſum of one hundred thouſand francs; for he was anxious to aſſiſt, in his neceſſity, don John of Caſtille, and clearly ſhewed for what uſe he intended this money. The receiver replied to the letters from the king, and to thoſe who had brought them, in a very civil manner, ſaying, that in truth he had money ſufficient, but that he could not pay any of it without the conſent and permiſſion of the town of Paris. Theſe words did not pleaſe the king, who declared he would remedy all this as ſoon as he ſhould be able. He found the money elſewhere, through the aſſiſtance of the principal towns in Picardy.

This cauſed a great coolneſs between the king and the Pariſians. He never came to Paris, but reſided at Meaux, Senlis, Compeigne, and in thoſe parts, to the great diſpleaſure of the Pariſians. The greateſt reſource they had was in the duke of Anjou for their ſafety: he already ſigned himſelf king of Sicily and Jeruſalem, and had borne the arms.

The duke commonly reſided at Paris, becauſe there was much money kept there, and to prevent the king from receiving any of it, that he might be the better ſupplied for his projected enterpriſe in Italy he was collecting money from all parts, and it was ſaid the ſum he had at Roquemaur*, near Avignon, was not leſs than two

* Roquemaur,—two leagues from Avignon.

millions of florins. He treated with the Parisians, and uſed ſuch fine language, having words at command, and beſides being from his birth the regent of the kingdom, as the eldeſt of the king's uncles, that he obtained one hundred thouſand florins, when the king and his two uncles of Berry and Burgundy could not procure one penny from them.

The duke of Anjou, having now finiſhed his preparations and collected all his ſtores, began his march early in ſpring, and the magnitude of his array ſurpriſed every one. He paſſed through France to Avignon, where he was much feaſted by the pope and cardinals. The barons and principal lords of Provence came thither to wait on him as their lord, did him homage, and put themſelves under his obedience.

The gallant earl of Savoy, his couſin, came to meet him, attended by barons and knights, who were alſo well received by the pope and cardinals. During his ſtay at Avignon, he arranged and ſettled the pay and ſtores for the Savoyards, who were in conſiderable numbers, and delivered the money to the earl of Savoy. This being done, the duke of Anjou and the earl of Savoy took their leave of the pope, and ſet off from Avignon, following the road to Savoy and Piedmont. The earl was the duke's conductor, and paid him the utmoſt reſpect in all the great towns through which they paſſed. Men at arms were continually advancing, or followed in their rear ſo that Lombardy was quite open and ready to receive them.

On the duke's entrance into Lombardy, he was moſt

moſt honourably received in all the principal towns, more eſpecially in Milan, where ſir Galeas and ſir Bernabo Viſconti loaded him with honours: he received from them ſuch rich preſents and jewels as would aſtoniſh, if related. The duke of Anjou kept a kingly ſtate: he had his mint with him, where he coined florins and white money, with which he made his payments all through Lombardy and Tuſcany.

When they began to approach Rome, they marched in a more compact body than they had hitherto done; for the Romans, being informed of the duke's march, had thrown up ſtrong fortifications to oppoſe him. They had for commander a valiant Engliſh knight, called ſir John Hawkwood*, who had reſided a long time in that part of Italy: he was well acquainted with the frontiers, and had under him a large body of men at arms, of Germans, Engliſh and other nations in the pay of the Romans, for the defence of Urban, at that time called pope, and who reſided at Rome.

This pope was not alarmed at the arrival of the duke of Anjou. When they told him he was on his march, attended by the earl of Savoy and the count of Geneva, with full nine thouſand lances of good men at arms, and that it was uncertain if he would not come to Rome to dethrone him, for they were all Clementines, he replied by ſaying, 'CHRISTUS protegat nos.' That was all the

* Sir John Hawkwood. See his life in Nichol's Bib. Top. Brit.

alarm

they gave him and the only anſwer he made to thoſe who ſpoke to him on the ſubject.

The duke of Anjou, who titled himſelf king of Naples, Sicily and Jeruſalem, duke of Calabria and la Puglia, accompanied by the earl of Savoy, continued the march of his army through Tuſcany, the territory of Ancona, and the patrimony of St. Peter, but did not enter Rome; for the duke wiſhed not to make war on Rome, nor on the Romans, but ſolely aimed to accompliſh his enterpriſe on the terms according to which he had left France. He kept up kingly ſtate wherever he paſſed, and all men at arms praiſed him for the punctuality of his payments.

At this period his adverſary, the lord Charles de Durazzo, reſided in the city of Naples. He alſo ſigned himſelf king of Naples, Sicily and Jeruſalem, duke of la Puglia and Calabria, and conſidered himſelf as the lawful king, ſince the queen of Naples was dead without leaving any heirs by marriage. He looked on the gift which the queen had made to the pope as null, and maintained this opinion by two arguments: the firſt was, that beſides being ſupported and obeyed by the Neapolitans and Sicilians, the queen of Naples could not reſign the inheritance of another; ſecondly, that ſuppoſing this reſignation to have been good and the gift in force to the court of Rome, and that the popes were entitled to it, ſhe had not legally done it, for thoſe kingdoms conſidered Urban as the true pope, and not Clement.

This

This is the question which they diſputed, and the defence Charles de Durazzo made. He alſo at the beginning took very wiſe precautions, for he amply provided with ſtores the caſtel del Ovo, which is one of the ſtrongeſt caſtles in the world, and ſituated as it were by enchantment in the ſea, ſo that it is impoſſible to take it but by necromancy or by the help of the devil*.

When he had provided this caſtle with a ſufficiency to laſt three or four years, he collected a body of men at arms and threw himſelf into it, having made all the entrances very ſecure, leaving the duke of Anjou to act as he pleaſed. He well knew the Neapolitans would never deſert him, and that, if la Puglia and Calabria ſhould be loſt for two or three years, they could eaſily regain it.

He expected the duke of Anjou would ſoon find himſelf at the end of his reſources in maintaining ſuch a large army as he had brought, and which it was impoſſible for him to continue to ſupport. They would be in want of proviſion or pay, which would tire them out in the courſe of two or three years; and, when they ſhould be well worn down, he might combat them to his advantage. Charles de Durazzo was full of theſe ideas, ſome of which were afterwards realized. In truth, no prince in Chriſtendom, except the kings of France or England, would have been able to have kept up ſuch an immenſe force as the duke of Anjou did; for they reported he had brought over the mountains

* Denys Sauvage adds a marginal note, that 'if the good man Froiſſart believes this, his mind muſt be very ſimple.'

thirty

thirty thouſand combatants, without hurting his finances: and the undertaking ſuch an enterpriſe required much thought and conſideration.

CHAP. VIII.

THE EARL OF SAVOY, WHO HAD ACCOMPANIED THE DUKE OF ANJOU TO NAPLES, ORDERS A MAN TO BE BEHEADED, WHO HAD BOASTED THAT HE WOULD GIVE THEM POSSESSION OF THE CASTEL DEL OVO BY ENCHANTMENT.

WHEN the duke of Anjou and his army entered la Puglia and Calabria, the whole country was their own, and the people teſtified that they wiſhed not for any other lord than him: in a ſhort time, all the barons, principal towns and others, put themſelves under his obedience. Thoſe who have been in theſe countries, which are the richeſt in the world, report, that from the great abundance of every thing, the people are perfectly indolent, and do no manner of labour.

The men at arms, on entering ſo rich a country, felt themſelves very comfortable; but the duke of Anjou, the earl of Savoy, the count of Vendôme, the count of Geneva*, and all the knighthood of France, Savoy and Brittany, marched on into the territories of Naples.

* Count of Geneva. Giannone ſays, he was brother to pope Clement.

The

The citizens of Naples, not fearing theſe men at arms, deigned not to ſhut their gates, but kept them always open, as they never imagined the duke of Anjou could reſide there longer than it was agreeable to them; for the moment they ſhould be incloſed in the town, whatever numbers they might be, they would be loſt, as the houſes were not eaſy to be taken, having before their doors planks which may be removed, and the ſea underneath, on which they would not perhaps like to adventure themſelves.

An enchanter, maſter of necromancy, who had reſided for ſome time in the Neapolitan territory, came to the duke of Anjou, and ſaid,—'My lord, if you will, I can cauſe the caſtel del Ovo and its garriſon to ſurrender to you,' 'How can that be?' replied the duke. 'My lord, I will tell you,' anſwered the enchanter: 'I can, by enchantment, make the air ſo thick over the ſea, that thoſe in the caſtle ſhall think it a large bridge, on which ten men may march in front: and, when they ſhall ſee this bridge, they will be ſo frightened they will ſurrender themſelves to you, leſt, if you attack them, they be taken by ſtorm.' The duke, much aſtoniſhed at what he had heard called his knights, the count de Vendôme, the count de Genéve, ſir John and ſir Peter de Bueil, ſir Morice de Maumi and others, to whom he related what the enchanter had juſt told him. They were very much ſurpriſed, but ſeemed willing to give him faith for it.

The duke then aſked,—'Fair maſter, can our people march on this bridge of which you ſpeak

as

as far as the caſtle, and attack it?' 'My lord,' replied the magician, 'of this I dare not aſſure you; for if any one of them, while on this bridge, ſhould make the ſign of the croſs, all would diſappear, and thoſe on it would fall into the ſea.' The duke, upon this, began to laugh, and ſome of the young knights preſent ſaid,—'Ha, my lord, for God's ſake, let him do it: we will not make any ſign of the croſs, and by this means we ſhall eaſily capture our enemies.' The duke ſaid he would conſider of it.

The earl of Savoy was not preſent at this converſation, but came ſoon afterwards. When the earl entered the duke's tent, the magician had juſt left it; but the duke told him all that had paſſed, and what offers he had made. The earl, having muſed a while, ſaid, 'Send him to my quarters, and I will examine him. He is that maſter magician by whoſe means the queen of Naples and ſir Otho de Brunſwick were taken in the caſtel del Ovo, for he cauſed the ſea to ſwell ſo high that it ſeemed as if it would ſwallow the caſtle: thoſe within it were ſo much frightened they looked on themſelves as dead. One ought never to put too great a confidence in ſuch people; for you ſee the wickedneſs of the wretches in this country: in order to pleaſe you, and to obtain your benefactions, he will betray Charles de Durazzo, to whom he formerly gave up the queen of Naples and her husband.'

'Well,' replied the duke, 'I will ſend him to you.' The converſation took another turn, and, after

after they had well confidered their ſituation, the earl returned to his quarters.

On the morrow morning, when the lords were riſen, the magician waited on the duke, bowing moſt lowly. As ſoon as the duke perceived him, he ordered a valet to conduct him to the earl of Savoy. The valet, taking his hand, ſaid, 'Maſter, my lord's will is, that you go to the earl of Savoy.' He anſwered, 'God's will be done.' When arrived at the tent of the earl, the valet ſaid, 'My lord, here is the doctor whom my lord ſends to you.' The earl was much pleaſed on ſeeing him, and ſaid, 'Doctor, do you aſſure us for a certainty, that you will gain us the caſtel del Ovo at ſo cheap a rate?' 'Yes, by my troth, my lord,' replied the enchanter, 'for by a ſimilar trick I got it for him who is now within it, namely the lord Charles de Durazzo, from the queen of Naples, her daughter and huſband ſir Robert d'Artois* and ſir Otho de Brunſwick. I am the man in the world of whom the lord Charles has the greatest dread.'

'By my faith,' replied the earl, 'you ſpeak well; but I wiſh the lord Charles to know, that he is in the wrong to fear you ſo much, for I will make him eaſy on that head: you ſhall not hence-

* Robert d'Artois. Denys Sauvage, in his 24th annotation, ſays,—'The hiſtory of Naples often ſpeaks of this Robert d'Artois, making him the huſband of Mary, daughter to Joan queen of Naples; but no mention whatever is made of theſe enchantments. They ſeem to come from the romances of Morgante and Urganda; ſo that I am ſurpriſed Froiſſart could ſuffer himſelf to be thus deceived, and wiſh to deceive poſterity.'

forward

forward perform any enchantment to deceive him or any one elſe. I will not have it reproached to us in times to come, that ſuch knights and ſquires and valiant men at arms here aſſembled ſhould have been obliged for our ſucceſs to magic, nor do we deſire to conquer our enemies by ſuch means.' He then ordered a ſervant to call the headſman, and have his head ſtruck off. The earl's commands were inſtantly obeyed, and his head was cut off on the outſide of the tent. Such was the end of this enchanter, and ſuch his recompenſe.

We will now leave the duke of Anjou, his army and his marches, and return to the affairs of Portugal, and relate how the Engliſh and Gaſcons proſpered.

CHAP. XI.

THE CANON DE ROBERSAC MAKES ANOTHER EXCURSION CONTRARY TO THE WILL OF THE KING OF PORTUGAL, AND TAKES SEVERAL PLACES ADJOINING TO SEVILLE.

THE knights in garriſon at Beſiouſe, and who had been there for ſo conſiderable a time, having made but one excurſion, when they took the Caſtle of Fighiere, reſolved, about the middle of April, to make another: for they were very much ſurpriſed at the conduct of the king of Portugal

Portugal and earl of Cambridge, who had let them remain idle the nine months they had now been in Portugal, without having formed any expedition but the one for which they had been blamed.

They determined to ſend to and remonſtrate with the earl of Cambridge on this ſubject: I believe the envoy was the ſouldich de la Trane. He came to Eſtremoz, where the earl was quartered, and ſaid to him,—'My lord, my companions ſend me to you, to know what you would wiſh them to do; for they much wonder why they have been brought to this country, to remain ſo long in indolence, which diſpleaſes them much. You will let me know what you would have them do, for they are very deſirous of making an excurſion.'

'Souldich,' replied the earl,' you know, that when I left England, my lord and brother the duke of Lancaſter promiſed me, on his faith, that on his return from Scotland, whither he was then going, he would join us with men at arms, to the amount of three thouſand, and as many archers. Upon this engagement, I came merely to reconnoitre the country. In a ſhort time we ſhall have intelligence from him; for it is equally unpleaſant to me to have remained ſo long in this country. You will therefore ſalute your companions in my name, and tell them what I have juſt ſaid to you. I cannot wiſh to prevent them from making an excurſion, ſince they have ſuch an inclination for it; but you know the king of Portugal gives us our pay, and therefore we ought to conform to his orders.'

'By my faith, my lord,' anſwered the ſouldich,

'he

'he pays badly, and our companions complain much of it: he owes us now ſix months pay.'

'He will pay you well,' replied the earl: 'money never comes diſagreeably.' On this, the ſouldich left the earl, and returned to his companions, to whom he related what you have heard.

'Gentlemen,' ſaid the canon, 'I will not deſiſt from making an excurſion, notwithſtanding what has been ſaid, for I ſee clearly they wiſh to put off all ſuch attempts, They do not deſire we ſhould commit hoſtilities, that we may not have cauſe to demand our pay: but my opinion is, that we take the field.'

They ſelected thoſe who ſhould form this expedition, and reſolved to undertake it on the morrow having their arms quite ready.

The lord John de Ferrande, one of the knights of the king of Portugal, who had learnt they were deſirous of performing ſome enterpriſe, came to them, and brought letters to the canon de Roberſac. He read them, and found that the king of Portugal forbid him to quit his quarters; adding, that he was well informed it was through his means all theſe expeditions were thought of.

The canon was much enraged at this order, and ſaid to the knight,—'John, I ſee plainly the king will not permit me to make any excurſion. Now, ſuppoſe I remain in my houſe, do you think that the others, who are better knights and more valiant than I, will alſo ſtay at home and give up their enterpriſe? Oh no, by my troth, as you will ſee to-morrow; for they are determined

mined and prepared to take the field.' 'My lord,' replied Ferrande, 'command them, in the king's name, not to do ſo.' 'By my faith,' ſaid the canon, 'I will do no ſuch thing: do you, who belong to the king, order them yourſelf.'

Things remained in this ſtate all night. In the morning, the trumpets ſounded, when the knights and ſquires, being armed and mounted, came before the canon's houſe, who had not put on his armour. On the Engliſh and Gaſcon knights drawing up, he came to the window, and told them the king of Portugal would not allow him, nor any of his party, to make an excurſion. 'By my faith,' anſwered they, 'we will have a ride, ſince we are ſo well inclined to it: and ſo ſhall you too, for it ſhall never be reproached you, that when we had taken the field, you ſtaid at home.' The canon was then obliged to arm himſelf, and mount his horse. The Portugueſe knight, the lord Ferrande, was obliged to do the ſame; ſo much was he pressed by the others, but it occaſioned him to ſtand in the ill graces of the king, and he was near being hanged.

They marched out of Beſiouſe to the amount of about four hundred ſpears and as many archers; and, taking the Seville road towards a caſtle and town called Ban,* continued their march until they arrived, and ſurrounded the part which ſeemed moſt eaſy to be taken. They diſmounted, formed themſelves in order of at-

* Ban. Q.

tack

tack, entered the ditches, which were dry, and began the aſſault vigorouſly.

At this time, there were no men at arms in the town of Ban. The inhabitants, though badly armed, mounted the walls and defended themſelves as well as they were able with lances and javelins, but this could not laſt long. They therefore began to treat with the aſſailants, and at length ſurrendered, on having their lives and fortunes ſpared, declaring they would put themſelves under the obedience of don Fernando king of Portugal.

They were well received in the town, which they entered to refreſh themſelves; when they began to examine by what means they could gain the caſtle. They ſaw it might be taken; and, that ſame evening, ſome of the army began to ſkirmiſh. On the morrow, a more regular attack commenced.

The governor of the caſtle was a gentleman of the country called Peter Jagouſes, but he was not an able man at arms, as he ſhewed; for as ſoon as he ſaw himſelf thus attacked, and ſo many men at arms advancing, he took fright, entered into terms, and ſurrendered the caſtle on his and the grrriſon's lives being ſpared. They ſtrengthened it with good men at arms and archers, and then departed towards another caſtle, ſeven leagues diſtant, called la Courtiſſe.* On their arrival, they inſtantly began the attack very ſharply; but thoſe within de-

* Courtiſſe. Q.

fended

fended themſelves to the utmoſt of their power, and diſdained to ſurrender. At the firſt attack, which was ſevere, the governor of the caſtle called Radulph, was ſlain. He was an expert and valiant man at arms, but, having adventured himſelf too raſhly on the bulwarks, was killed by an arrow. On his death the others lost courage: the caſtle was taken, and the greater part of the garriſon put to the ſword. Thus did the canon and his companions gain the caſtle of la Courtiſſe. They ſtrengthened it with a new garriſon; and, having well ſupplied it with every thing, they marched towards the city of Seville the grand.

CHAP. X.

THE CANON AND HIS COMPANIONS GAIN MUCH BOOTY FROM THE KING OF CASTILLE.—THEY MUTINY AGAINST THE KING OF PORTUGAL, WHO ORDERS THEIR PAY TO BE INSTANTLY DELIVERED TO THEM.

THESE Engliſh and Gaſcon men at arms continued marching until they came to Jaffre, ten leagues from Seville. It is a badly incloſed town; but there is a very ſtrong monaſtery which thoſe of the town and country had fortified, and they had retreated thither truſting to its ſtrength.

On their arrival, the town of Jaffre was immediately taken and burnt. They ſoon attacked the monaſtery; but it was an hour before it was taken,

when thoſe who firſt entered it gained great pillage: many were there ſlain. Having received intelligence that there were in ſome marſhy grounds, in an adjoining valley, upwards of twenty thouſand head of cattle, pigs, cows and ſheep, they puſhed forward; and, having entered the marſh, ordered their infantry to drive out the cattle. They then reſolved to return to their quarters in Beſiouſe, and ſet out accordingly. They arrived there on the evening of the enſuing day with all their booty; by which they had proviſions in abundance, and for a long time.

Thus ended this expedition. When the lord Ferrande returned to Liſbon to the king, and reported to him what they had done against their enemies, and the great booty they had made, he imagined the king would have been well pleaſed; but no, for he ſaid to him,—'How, thou ſtinking raſcal, haſt thou dared, after the poſitive denial I ſent them, to conſent to their making an excurſion, and to accompany them thyſelf? By St. Jacob, I will have thee hanged.' The knight, on this, caſt himſelf on his knees, and ſaid,—'My lord, their captain acquitted himſelf dutifully and loyally; but the others by force made him go with them, as well as myſelf, to ſhew them the country. When the expedition has ſo well ſucceeded, you ought to pardon it.'

Notwithstanding this ſpeech, the king ordered him to priſon, where he remained until the earl of Cambridge delivered him when he came to Liſbon on the buſineſs of which you ſhall hear.

After the Engliſh and Gaſcons were returned

to

to the town of Beſiouſe, and had remained there ſome time, they reſolved to ſend to the king of Portugal to demand their pay. They choſe unanimouſly the lord Talbot, a baron from Wales, as their ambaſſador. When the lord Talbot was come to Liſbon, and had remonſtrated with the king on the ſubject of his miſſion, the king only made for anſwer, 'that they had twice made excurſions contrary to his orders, which had much diſpleaſed him, and had been the cauſe of the delay in their payment.' As he could not obtain any other anſwer, lord Talbot returned to his companions, and related what the king had ſaid, which much angered them.

This ſame week, the earl of Cambridge quitted Eſtremoz and came to Beſiouſe, where he took up his lodgings, in a monaſtery of monks on the outſide of the town. The knights in garriſon were rejoiced on hearing this; for there were among them ſome who were unable to wait ſo long for their pay from the king, and ſaid among themſelves,—'We are marvellouſly well taken care of: we have been in this country almoſt a year, and have never received any money. It is impoſſible but our commander muſt have had ſome, for he would never have borne it for ſo great a length of time.'

Theſe murmurings increaſed ſo much that they declared they would not longer ſuffer ſuch treatment, and fixed a day to debate the matter among themſelves. The place of conference was appointed in a handſome church ſituated without the town of Beſiouſe, and oppoſite to the Cordeliers,

deliers, where the earl of Cambridge had his reſidence. The canon of Roberſac promiſed to attend: indeed, it was well he did, for otherwiſe it would have turned out badly.

About eight o'clock, they were all aſſembled, except the canon, ſuch as ſir William Beauchamp, ſir Matthew Gournay his uncle, the lord Talbot, ſir William Hermon;* and, of Gaſcons, the ſouldich de la Trane, the lord de la Barde, the lord de Châteauneuf and ſeveral more, who began to ſpeak and make their complaints known to each other. There was among them a knight baſtard brother to the king of England, called ſir John Sounder, who was louder than all the reſt, and ſaid,—'The earl of Cambridge has brought us hither: every day we venture our lives, and are willing ſo to do, for his ſervice, and yet he keeps our pay. I therefore adviſe, that we form a ſtrict union among ourſelves, and unanimouſly agree to diſplay the pennon of St. George, declaring ourſelves friends to God, and enemies to all the world; for if we do not make ourſelves feared, we ſhall not have any thing.' 'By my faith,' replied ſir William Helmon, 'you ſay well, and we will do it.' All agreed to the propoſal, and conſidered whom they ſhould chooſe for their leader: they thought they could not have a better than Sounder, for he would have more leiſure to do miſchief, and had greater courage for it, than the others.

They hoiſted the pennon of St. George, and cried out,—'A Sounder, a Sounder, that valiant

* Hermon. Q. Froiſſart calls him afterwards Helmon.

baſtard!

baſtard! Friends to God, and enemies to all mankind.' They were then well inclined to attack the town of Beſiouſe, and declare war againſt the king of Portugal.

Sir Matthew Gournay and ſir William Beauchamp had long argued againſt attacking Beſiouſe, but had been little attended to. At the moment they had diſplayed the pennon of St. George, and were quitting the church, the canon arrived, and, puſhing through the crowd, got up to the head altar, when he cried aloud,—'My fair ſirs, what are you going to do? Be orderly and temperate, I conjure you; for I ſee you are much diſturbed.'

Sir John Sounder and ſir William Helmon then advanced to him, and related what they had done and what were their intentions. The canon, by fair language, reſtrained them: 'Conſider, gentlemen, what you are about: that which you intend is folly and madneſs. We cannot deſtroy ourſelves more effectually. If we make war on this country, our enemies will hear of it, and will gain courage when they ſee we cannot oppoſe them. We ſhall thus ruin ourſelves two ways; for our enemies will be rejoiced and aſſured of what at preſent they may only ſuſpect, and we ſhall forfeit our loyalty to the earl of Cambridge.'

'And what would you have us do, canon?' ſaid Sounder: 'we have expended much more than our pay, and ſince our arrival in Portugal we have not had any loan or any payment whatever. If you have been paid, we have not, and your complaints will be vain.'

By

'By my faith, Sounder,' replied the canon, 'I have not received more than you have, nor will I receive any thing without your knowledge.'

Some of the knights preſent anſwered,—'We firmly believe you: but all things muſt have an end. Shew us how we may get clear of this buſineſs with honour, and that as ſpeedily as may be; for if we be not well paid, and in a ſhort time, matters will go ill.'

The canon de Roberſac then replied,—'Fair ſirs, I would adviſe firſt of all, in the ſituation we are in, that we wait on the earl of Cambridge, and remonſtrate with him on theſe matters of which he ought to be informed.' 'And who is there among us,' ſaid ſome one, 'who will remonſtrate with him?' 'I will,' replied Sounder; 'but you muſt all avow what I ſhall ſay.' The whole company promiſed to do ſo. They then departed with the pennon of St. George, which they had that day diſplayed, carried before them, and came to the Cordeliers, where the earl of Cambridge was lodged.

Juſt as he was going to dinner, theſe companions, to the amount of about ſeven hundred, entered the court, and demanded the earl, who, having quitted his chamber, came into the hall to ſpeak with them. The knights had advanced with Sounder at their head, and remonſtrated in an agreeable manner and ſpeech, ſaying, 'My lord, it was you who aſſembled us in England; and we came hither according to your entreaties as well as the others who are now without: we

have

have left our country to oblige you. You are therefore our chief, and we muſt look to you for our pay, of which hitherto we have not received any thing; for, as to the king of Portugal, we ſhould never have come to his country, nor entered his ſervice, if you had not been our paymaſter. However, if you ſay that the war concerns only the king of Portugal, and that you are not intereſted in it, we will ſoon pay ourſelves our ſubſidy, for we will overrun the country, let the conſequences be what they may.'

'Sounder,' replied the earl, 'I do not ſay that you ought not to be paid; but, that if you overrun this country, you will throw great blame on me, as well as on the king of England, who is ſo ſtrictly allied to the king of Portugal.'

'And what would you have us do?' aſked Sounder. 'I will,' replied the earl, 'that you chooſe three of our knights, an Engliſhman, a Gaſcon and a German, and that theſe three ſet out for Liſbon, to explain to the king this buſineſs, and the length of time he has delayed payment to our companions. When you ſhall thus have ſummoned him, you will have a better right to follow your own inclinations.' 'By my faith,' ſaid the canon de Roberſac, 'my lord of Cambridge ſays well, and ſpeaks wisely and boldly.' They all agreed to this laſt propoſal; but, notwithſtanding, they would not take down the pennon of St. George, ſaying that ſince they had unanimouſly raiſed it in Portugal, they would not lower it as long as they ſhould remain there.

They

They then ſelected thoſe who were to wait on the king of Portugal: ſir William Helmon was choſen by the Engliſh, ſir Thomas Simon by the Germans, the lord de Châteauneuf by the Gaſcons. Theſe three knights ſet out, and continued their journey until they came to Liſbon, where they found the king, who received them handſomely, aſked from them the news, and what their companions were doing?

'My lord,' they replied, 'they are all in very good health, and would willingly make ſome excurſions, and employ this ſeaſon otherwiſe than they do; for long idleneſs is not agreeable to them.' 'Well,' ſaid the king, 'they ſhall very ſhortly make an excurſion, and I will accompany them, and you will let them know this from me.'

'My lord,' anſwered ſir William, 'we are ſent hither by their orders, to tell you, that ſince their arrival in this country, they have neither had loan nor payment from you, and that they are not ſatisfied; for whoever wiſhes to obtain the love and ſervice of men at arms muſt pay them better than you have hitherto done, the neglect of which they have for ſome time taken to heart; for they know not on whom they depend, and have thrown the blame on our captains, ſo that the affair was on the point of taking a very diſagreeable turn. Our chiefs excuſed themſelves, as it was known they had not received any thing. Now, know for a truth, they will be paid their full pay, if you wiſh their ſervices; and if you will not pay them, they aſſure you by us, that they will pay themſelves from your country. Therefore conſider well this

buſineſs,

buſineſs, and give us ſuch an anſwer as we may carry back; for they are only waiting our return.'

The king muſed a little, and then ſaid, 'Sir William, it is but juſt they ſhould be paid: but they have much vexed me, by diſobeying my orders, in making two excurſions, which if they had not done, they ſhould long ago have been fully ſatisfied in every reſpect.'

'Sire,' replied ſir William, 'if they have made any excurſions, they have turned out to your advantage: they have taken towns, caſtles, and overrun the territories of your enemy, even as far as Seville: all this has been gallantly performed. They ought not to loſe this ſeaſon, which, indeed, they are determined not to do; for they declare, on our return, they will pay themſelves, unleſs they ſhall receive by us a more gracious anſwer, than as yet they have obtained from you.'

'Well,' ſaid the king, 'inform them, that within fifteen days at the lateſt, I will give orders for their pay to be delivered to them, to the utmoſt farthing; but tell the earl of Cambridge that I wiſh to ſpeak with him.' 'Sire,' replied ſir William, 'I will do ſo, and you ſay well.'

As he finiſhed theſe words, dinner was ſerved, when they dined together, and the king made the three ſit at his table, and feaſted them much. Thus paſſed the day, and on the morrow they returned to their friends. As ſoon as their arrival was known, the knights crowded about them, to learn what they had done: they related to them the anſwer, and the king's promiſe, with which they

were all well ſatisfied. 'Now ſee,' ſaid Sounder, 'if riot be not ſometimes of uſe: we have advanced the delivery of our pay, by having been a little riotous: he fares well who is feared.'

The three knights waited on the earl of Cambridge, and reported to him what they had done, and that the king wanted to ſpeak with him. He ſet out from the town in the morning, and rode to Liſbon, where he was joyfully received by his ſon and daughter-in-law.

The king had a long conference with him, when they determined on certain expeditions. The king, in conſequence, iſſued his ſummons throughout the realm, for every one to be prepared for the field by the ſeventh of June, and to aſſemble between the towns of Badajos and Clemence.

This ſummons was publiſhed throughout the kingdom of Portugal, when all deſcriptions of men armed and prepared themſelves in the beſt manner they were able, to be at the rendezvous on foot, by the appointed day.

On the arrival of the earl of Cambridge at Liſbon, don Ferrande obtained his liberty, with whom the king had been much angered, on account of thoſe before mentioned excurſions. The earl took his leave, returned to his companions, in high ſpirits and ordered them to be in readineſs by the day which had been fixed on. Soon after money arrived for the pay of the troops, the captains firſt, ſo that every one was contented; but the pennon of St. George was ſtill diſplayed.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

THE KINGS OF CASTILLE AND PORTUGAL ASSEMBLE THEIR FORCES.—PEACE MADE BETWEEN THEM AGAINST THE WILL OF THE ENGLISH.

DON John of Caſtille was not idle in collecting numbers of men at arms. Two thouſand ſpears, knights and ſquires, and four thouſand infantry, had come to him from France: he had, beſides, in his own country, ten thouſand horſe, and as many foot. As he reſided at Seville, he was not ignorant of the ſummons which the king of Portugal had iſſued: he therefore, finding himſelf the ſtrongeſt, thought he ſhould act more honourably in this war, if he ſent to the king of Portugal, to aſk him to fix on any ſpot in his dominions, where the two armies could meet, and fight it out; and that, if he would not, he would offer a place in Spain for the combat.

He therefore ſent a herald with this meſſage, who rode on until he came to Liſbon, where he delivered it to the king, word for word. The king replied to the herald, that he would maturely conſider the option given to him, and would ſend to the king of Spain his final anſwer. The herald, having executed his commiſſion, took leave of the king, and returned to Seville.

He found there the king and his barons, as well as thoſe who had come from France, Arragon

gon and Galicia, to whom he reported all he had heard or ſeen.

No long time paſſed before the king of Portugal was adviſed by the councils of the Engliſh to offer a place in his own country, for the two armies to combat. Sir Thomas Simon and the ſouldich de la Trane, were ordered on the part of the king to ſeek for a proper ſituation: they choſe a ſpot between Elvas and Badajos, where there was room ſufficient for the battle. As they were going to execute this order, the two knights and their men ſkirmiſhed with ſome advanced forces of the king of Caſtille: the engagement was ſevere, and ſeveral were ſlain and wounded on both ſides. They, however, returned to the king of Portugal, and related where they had choſen a fit ſituation, and alſo the name of the place.

A German knight, called ſir John Couſtedor, was ordered to carry this intimation, attended by a herald, to the king of Spain. The knight ſet out, and rode to Seville, where he found the king, and related what the king of Portugal had inſtructed him to ſay, that he accepted his offer of combat, and had fixed on a place for the field of battle, between Elvas and Badajos; and that within five days after his return from Seville, he would there find the king of Portugal with his whole army, who deſired nothing better than to give him battle.

The Spaniards were much pleaſed with this news, as were alſo the French. Sir Triſtan de Roye, ſir John de Vernettes, ſir Peter de Villames, and others, taking with them the knight from Portugal,

Portugal, entertained him magnificently for one whole day in Seville, and ſhewed him as much reſpect as poſſible. They eſcorted him as far as Jaffres, when they returned; and the knight continued his journey to the king of Portugal and his knights, and told them how he had delivered his meſſage, and the anſwer he had received, which gave them great ſatisfaction.

It was not long before the king of Portugal came and encamped where his army was, between Elvas and Badajos. It was a handſome plain below ſome olive trees; and he had brought thither the greater part of his ſubjects from whom he could expect aſſiſtance: they might amount to about fifteen thouſand men.

On the fourth day afterwards, the earl of Cambridge arrived with the Engliſh, in handſome array: they were about ſix hundred men at arms and as many archers: they encamped themſelves together, ſeparate from the king's army.

When the king of Spain heard that the king of Portugal was encamped on the field where the battle was to be fought, he ſeemed delighted, and ſaid,—'Come, let us make haſte: our enemies are waiting: it is time for us to ſet out. We have offered them battle, which they have accepted, and are ready by the day appointed, ſo that an engagement muſt enſue: let us therefore march thither.'

The men at arms were then ordered to advance with their men, for the king was ſetting out. All the knights, ſquires and men at arms, in conſequence,

quence, broke up their quarters, both Spaniards and French, and followed the banners of don John of Caſtille, who encamped two ſhort leagues from Badajos, in the plains of Elvas.

The king of Spain had in his army upwards of thirty thouſand fighting men, including thoſe mounted on genets: they were in the whole ſixty thouſand. In this ſituation, the two armies remained oppoſite to each other. There was only between them the mountain of Badajos, which is a large town belonging to the king of Spain, and where his men went whenever they were in want of proviſion. The city of Elvas was on the oppoſite ſide, and belonged to the king of Portugal.

On the plain there were daily ſkirmiſhes; for the young bachelors who were deſirous to advance themſelves went thither, when ſome gallant feats were continually performed: they then returned to their quarters. Things remained in this ſtate for upwards of fifteen days; and it was not any fault in the king of Spain that the combat did not take place, for it depended ſolely on the king of Portugal, who, not being in ſufficient force to meet the Spaniards, was afraid of the event. He well knew, that if he were defeated, his kingdom would be loſt, and that whole ſeaſon he had been expecting the duke of Lancaſter, with the great aid he was to bring him from England of four thouſand men at arms and the ſame number of archers.

The earl of Cambridge had aſſured the king of Portugal, that he might depend on this, and thought nothing could prevent it; for the duke

of

of Lancaſter, when he was ſetting out for Scotland, had ſworn to him by his faith, that on his return, he would think of nothing elſe, and would inſtantly come to Portugal with ſuch an army as ſhould enable him to engage with the king of Caſtille.

True it is, that the duke of Lancaſter did every thing in his power to prevail on the king and his council to liſten to this buſineſs; but on account of the internal troubles which had happened this year, and ſome events which had fallen out in Flanders, the king and his council would not conſent to this expedition to Portugal, ſo that all the men at arms were detained in England.

When the king of Portugal heard this, and found that he muſt not expect any ſuccours from England, he began to open a treaty: the grand maſter of Calatrava, don Pedro de Modesque, the biſhop of Burgos and the biſhop of Liſbon, entered into negotiations for peace between Portugal and Spain. Theſe were carried on ſo ſucceſsfully, that peace was made, without any notice being taken of the Engliſh. The earl of Cambridge was very melancholy on learning this news, and would willingly have made war on the king of Portugal, if he had been ſtrong enough in the country; but he was not: he was therefore obliged to endure this peace whether he would or not.

The Engliſh complained that the king of Portugal had behaved ill to them, from the beginning to the end, and that he had always diſſembled with the Spaniards, for he had never had any inclination

clination to fight with them. The king excuſed himſelf, by throwing all the blame on the duke of Lancaſter, and the Engliſh, for not coming according to their promiſes, and aſſured them that at that moment he could not act otherwiſe.

CHAP. XII.

A JOUST BETWEEN A FRENCH KNIGHT AND AN ENGLISH SQUIRE.—THE EARL OF CAMBRIDGE LEADS BACK HIS ARMY TO ENGLAND, WITH HIS SON, WHOSE BETROTHED WIFE, THE INFANTA OF PORTUGAL, IS AFTERWARDS MARRIED TO THE KING OF CASTILLE.

IN the army of the king of Caſtille was a young knight from France, called ſir Triſtan de Roye, who was deſirous of diſplaying his courage. When he ſaw, that as peace was concluded, there would not be any engagement, he determined not to quit Spain, without doing ſomething to be talked of. He ſent a herald to the Engliſh army, requeſting, that ſince peace had put an end to the combat, ſome one would have the kindneſs to tilt with him three courſes with the lance before the city of Badajos. When this requeſt was brought to the army, they conſulted together, and ſaid it ought not to be refuſed.

A young Engliſh ſquire then ſtepped forth, called Miles Windſor, who wiſhed honourably to be created a knight, and ſaid to the herald; 'Friend, return

return to thy maſters, and tell ſir Triſtan de Roye, that to-morrow he ſhall be delivered from his vow, by Miles Windſor, before the city of Badajos, according to his requeſt.'

The herald returned, and related the anſwer to his masters, and ſir Tristran de Roye, who was highly pleaſed. On the morrow morning, Miles Windſor left the army of the earl of Cambridge, and went towards Badajos, which was hard by, as there was only the mountain to croſs, well accompanied by his friends; ſuch as ſir Matthew Gournay, ſir William Beauchamp, ſir Thomas Simon, the ſouldich de la Trane, the lord de Châteauneuf, the lord de la Barde, and ſeveral more; there were upwards of one hundred knights on the ſpot, where the tournament was to be performed. Sir Tristan de Roye was already there, accompanied by French and Bretons.

Miles was created a knight by the ſouldich de la Trane, as being the most accompliſhed knight there, and the perſon who had been in the greatest number of brilliant actions. When the combatants were completely armed, with lances in their rests, and mounted, they ſpurred their horſes, and, lowering their ſpears, met each other with ſuch force that their lances were twice broken against their breast-plates, but no other hurt enſued. They then took their third lance, and the ſhock was ſo great that the heads of Bourdeaux steel pierced their ſhields, and through all their other armour even to the ſkin, but did not wound them: the ſpears were

ſhattered, and the broken pieces flew over their helmets. This combat was much praiſed by all the knights of each ſide who were preſent. They then took leave of each other with much reſpect, and returned to their different quarters, for no other deeds of arms were performed.

Peace being now reſtored, both Spaniards and Portugueſe returned to their own homes. In ſuch manner was this great aſſembly of Spaniards, Engliſh and Portugueſe broken up.

At this time, news was brought to the army of the king of Spain, that the king of Granada had declared war againſt the kings of Barbary and Tremeçen, and that all men at arms who might wiſh to go thither would be received into pay. The king of Granada had ſent paſſports, and ordered his meſſengers to ſay, that to thoſe who arrived in Granada, he would advance a quarter's pay.

Several French knights who wiſhed to advance themſelves, as ſir Triſtan de Roye, ſir Geoffry de Chargny, ſir Peter de Clermont, took leave of don John of Caſtille, and went to thoſe parts in ſearch of deeds of arms. Some Engliſh went thither alſo, but they were few in number; for the earl of Cambridge conducted them to England, carrying his ſon with him. He ſhewed how much diſſatisfied he was with the king by not leaving this ſon behind, who had been betrothed to the infanta of Portugal.

The earl ſaid the air of Portugal did not agree with his ſon's health; and, in ſpite of every thing the king could urge, he would not permit

him

him to ſtay, adding, that he was too young to remain in Portugal, from which the following conſequences enſued:

About a year after the concluſion of this peace, when the Engliſh were returned home with the earl of Cambridge, the queen of don John of Caſtille died: ſhe was daughter to the king of Arrogan. The king being thus a widower, it was conſidered by the barons and prelates of Spain and Portugal, that the propereſt alliance which could be made with the lady Beatrice of Portugal was the king of Spain, who could not more nobly connect himſelf than with the infanta. In order to confirm the peace between the two kingdoms, the king of Portugal conſented, and broke off the match with the ſon of the earl of Cambridge, by a diſpenſation from the pope, who confirmed this new alliance. Thus became the infanta of Portugal queen of Spain, Gallicia and Caſtille; and ſhe brought the king a ſon the firſt year of her marriage, to his great joy.

The king of Portugal died ſoon after this event; but the Portugueſe were unwilling to ſubmit themſelves to the dominion of the Spaniards, and gave the crown to a baſtard brother of the king, who was grand maſter of the order of Avis*, and called the baſtard of Portugal. He was a valiant man, had always borne arms, and much beloved by the Portugueſe, as they ſhowed; for they crowned him king, and

* Avis. Froiſſart calls him maſter Denys. For particulars of the order of the Bird, ſee the Hiſtoire des Ordres de Chivalerie.

choſe him their lord for his valour. This tranſaction was the cauſe of great wars between the kingdoms of Spain and Portugal, as you ſhall hear related in the courſe of this hiſtory.

When the earl of Cambridge, the canon de Roberſac, and the Engliſh knights were returned from Portugal, and had waited on the king and duke of Lancaſter, they were very graciouſly entertained, as was right, and then they were aſked for news: they told them a ſufficiency, and the hiſtory of their whole campaign.

The duke of Lancaſter, whom this buſineſs touched more eſſentially than any other, on account of the claim he made to Caſtille, in right of his wife, the lady Conſtance, eldeſt daughter to don Pedro, inquired of his brother every particular, and how they had conducted themſelves in Portugal.

The earl told him that the armies remained upwards of fifteen days oppoſite to each other: 'and becauſe, my fair brother, there came no intelligence of you, the king of Portugal haſtily made peace, and, in ſpite of every thing we could ſay, he would not conſent to a battle: our men were much concerned thereat, for they would willingly have hazarded it. Seeing, therefore, that affairs were not on a very ſure foundation, I have brought home my ſon, although he has been betrothed to the infanta.' 'I believe you were in the right,' replied the duke; 'but perhaps they may break this marriage, if they ſhall find a more agreeable alliance.' 'By my faith,'

faith,' ſaid the earl 'happen what may, I have done nothing that I repent of.'

Thus ended this converſation between the duke of Lancaſter and earl of Cambridge, when they entered on other matters. We will now leave them, and the wars of Spain and Portugal, to return to thoſe of Ghent, the earl and country of Flanders, which were very deſtructive.

CHAP. XIII.

GHENT IS IN GREAT DISTRESS FOR PROVISIONS; THEY ARE SUCCOURED BY THE INHABITANTS OF LIEGE.

EVER ſince the burning of Grammont, and the breaking up the ſiege of Ghent, through the grief of the earl of Flanders for the death of his couſin, the young lord d'Anghien, as you have before heard, the war was carried on ſolely by the garriſons in the different towns. The whole country was for the earl, except the Quatre Metiers, whence proviſions were ſent into Ghent, as well as from the county of Aloſt. But the earl of Flanders on hearing that cheeſe, butter and other things were ſent to Ghent from Aloſt and the adjacent villages, ſoon put a ſtop to it, by ordering the garriſon of Dendremond to burn and deſtroy the whole of that flat country; which orders being obeyed, the poor people who lived on the produce of their cattle,

were forced to fly into Brabant and Hainault and the greater part to beg their bread.

There ſtill, however, remained a country dependant on the Quatre Metiers, whence Ghent drew all its proviſion, which their enemies could not prevent.

This whole winter of 1382, the earl and country of Flanders had ſo much conſtrained Ghent that nothing could enter the place by land or water: he had perſuaded the duke of Brabant and duke Albert to ſhut up their countries ſo effectually, that no proviſions could be exported thence, but ſecretly, and with a great riſk to thoſe who attempted it. It was thought by the moſt intelligent, that it could not be long before they periſhed through famine, for all the ſtore-houſes of corn were empty, and the people could not obtain bread for money: when the bakers had baked any, it was neceſſary to guard their ſhops, for the populace who were ſtarving would have broken them open. It was melancholy to hear theſe poor people, (for men, women and children, of good ſubſtance, were in this miſerable plight,) make their daily complaints and cries to Philip von Atraveld, their commander in chief. He took great compaſſion on them, and made ſeveral very good regulations, for which he was much praiſed. He ordered the granaries of the monaſteries and rich men to be opened, and divided the corn among the poor, at a fixed price. By ſuch means he gave comfort to the town of Ghent, and governed it well. Sometimes there came to them

in

in caſks flour and baked bread from Holland and Zealand, which were of great aſſiſtance; for, had they not been thus ſuccoured by thoſe countries, they would have been much ſooner defeated.

The duke of Brabant had forbidden any of his ſubjects to carry proviſions to the inhabitants of Ghent, under pain of death; but, if they would run the riſk of coming to ſeek them, they might ſell or give. When Lent came, they were in the greateſt diſtreſs; for they had not any proviſion ſuitable to that time; inſomuch that a body of ſoldiers and other perſons, to the amount of twelve thouſand, driven deſperate by famine, left the town and went to Bruſſels. On their arrival, the gates were cloſed, for they were doubtful of their intentions, not knowing what to think of them. When they were near to Bruſſels, they ſent a party unarmed to the gates, in ſearch of proviſion, begging, for the love of God, they would have pity on them, and let them have victuals for their money, as they were dying of hunger, and would not do any harm to the country. The good people of Bruſſels had compaſſion on them, and carried them food ſufficient to ſatisfy their hunger. They remained there to recruit themſelves about three weeks, but did not enter any of the principal towns: they advanced as far as Louvain, the people of which place alſo took pity on them, and gave them many things. The leader and conductor of theſe men of Ghent was Francis Atremen, who adviſed them how to act, and alſo

made for them their agreements with the different towns. During the time they were refreshing themselves in the country round Louvain, he went to Liege, accompanied by twelve others, where he remonstrated so effectually with the magistrates that they consented, with the approbation of their bishop, the lord Arnold d'Ercle, to send to the earl of Flanders, and use their utmost endeavours to make a peace between them: adding, that if Liege had been as near to them as Brabant and Hainault, they would have more essentially assisted them in their rights, and in defending their privileges. However, they said, 'We will now do every thing we can for you, and, as you are merchants, and merchandise ought to pass freely every where, we have determined that you may contract at this moment for five or six hundred cart loads of corn and flour, which we will allow you to have, provided the good people from whom this provision comes can be satisfied.

'Our commerce will be suffered to pass through Brabant, for that country is in friendship with us; and, notwithstanding Brussels is shut against you, we know it is more through fear than inclination. The Brusselers have great compassion on your sufferings; but the duke and duchess of Brabant, at the solicitations of the earl of Flanders, are more his friends than yours, as it is natural that great lords should support each other.'

The men of Ghent were much pleased with the affectionate offers the Liegeois made them: they

they warmly thanked them, and ſaid, that with ſuch allies and friends, the town of Ghent might do much.

Francis and the citizens of Ghent who had accompanied him into Liege, having finiſhed their buſineſs, took leave of the magiſtrates, who ordered certain perſons to attend them through the country to collect carts and horſes. In two days they had ſix hundred loaded with corn and flour, for ſuch ſtores were then more neceſſary to them than any others. They ſet out on their return, paſſing between Louvain and Bruſſels. When Francis Atremen was returned to his men whom he had left in the neighbourhood of Louvain, he related to them the love and courteſy which thoſe of Liege had ſhewn, and the offer they had made of their friendſhip. He added, that they would go to Bruſſels to ſpeak with the ducheſs of Brabant, and beg and entreat of her, on the part of the good town of Ghent, to condeſcend to mediate between them and the earl their lord, ſo that they might obtain peace. They replied, 'God's will be done,' and marched to Bruſſels.

The duke of Brabant, at this time, was at Luxembourg on his affairs; and Francis, by permiſſion of the ducheſs, who was deſirous to ſee him, entered the town, attended only by two other perſons. They waited on her at her hôtel at Colleberge, where the ducheſs had aſſembled part of her council; and, throwing themſelves on their knees, Francis, who ſpoke for all, ſaid, —'Much honoured and dear lady, may it pleaſe you,

you, out of your great humility, to have compaſſion on the inhabitants of Ghent, who are not able, by any means hitherto employed, to obtain the pardon of their lord; but if you, very dear lady, would mediate between our lord and us, ſo that he would hear but reaſon and have mercy on his vaſſals, you would do a moſt charitable act, and our good friends and neighbours of Liege would unite to aſſiſt you at any time and in any manner you ſhall pleaſe.'

The ducheſs replied with much gentleneſs, 'that ſhe had long been ſorry for the diſſenſions which had ariſen between her brother * the earl and them, and would willingly have put an end to them ſome time paſt, had ſhe been able or had ſhe known how to do it: but you ſo often oppoſe him, and are ſo obſtinate in your opinions, that it keeps up his anger and hatred againſt you. Notwithſtanding all this, for love of God and through compaſſion, I will cheerfully undertake this buſineſs, and ſend to requeſt he will have the goodneſs to come to Tournay, where I will order my privy council. You will alſo exert yourſelves to gain the council of Hainault, to accompany that of Liege, which you ſay is ready to ſerve you.' 'Yes, madam, for they have ſo promiſed us.' 'Well,' ſaid the ducheſs, 'I will do ſomething that you ſhall hear of.' They replied, 'God preſerve, madam, your ſoul and body.'

At theſe words they took leave of the ducheſs

* *Her brother.* He had married one of her ſiſters.

and

and her council, departed from Bruſſels, and returned to their men and carriages, which were waiting for them, and then continued their road to Ghent.

When the news arrived that their people were returning, and bringing with them ſix hundred cart-loads of proviſion, of which they were in ſuch great want, they were highly delighted: theſe proviſions, however, from Liege were not ſufficient to maintain the town fifteen days; but to thoſe who are comfortleſs a little thing gives hope.

They made a numerous proceſſion to meet this convoy, and, by way of humbling themſelves, they fell on their knees when they met it, and with uplifted hands, ſaid to the merchants and drivers,—'Ah, good people, you do an act of great charity: you bring comfort to the lower claſſes in Ghent, who would not have had wherewithal to eat, if you had not come. Let us firſt give our thanks and praiſes to God, and then to you.'

In this manner were the proviſions attended to the market-place, and there unloaded: they were then delivered out in ſmall proportions to thoſe who were in the greateſt want; and five thouſand men were ordered to arm themſelves, and to eſcort back theſe carts as far as Brabant, and out of all danger.

The earl of Flanders, who reſided at Bruges, had information of all this, and how Ghent was ſo much ſtraitened that it could not hold out for any

any length of time. You may imagine he was not very much vexed at their poverty, any more than thoſe of his council, who would, with pleaſure, have ſeen the town of Ghent deſtroyed. Gilbert Matthew and his brothers, the deacon of ſmall trades of Ghent, and the provoſt of Harlebecque, were in high ſpirits at what they heard.

All the events happened in Lent, during the months of March and April 1382*. The earl of Flanders determined to lay ſiege to Ghent once more, but with a much ſuperior army to what he had hitherto brought againſt it; for he declared he would invade the Quatre Metiers, and burn and deſtroy them, as they had been too active in aſſiſting Ghent. The earl therefore ſignified his intentions to all the principal towns in Flanders, that they might be ready in time. Immediately after the proceſſion at Bruges, he was to march from thence, to lay ſiege to Ghent and deſtroy it. He wrote alſo to thoſe knights and ſquires who were dependant on him in Hainault, to meet him at Bruges at the appointed day, or even eight days before.

---

* 1382. That is beginning the year at January, otherwiſe 1381.

CHAP. XIV.

THE EARL OF FLANDERS SENDS A HARSH ANSWER TO THOSE WHO WISHED TO MEDIATE A PEACE BETWEEN HIM AND GHENT.—THE POPULACE, UNDER THE NAME OF MAILLOTINS, RISE AGAIN AT PARIS.

NOTWITHSTANDING all theſe ſummons, levies and orders, which the earl of Flanders was iſſuing, the ducheſs of Brabant, duke Albert and the biſhop of Liege, exerted themſelves ſo much, that a meeting of their councils, to conſider of the means of eſtabliſhing a peace, was ordered to be held in the city of Tournay.

The earl of Flanders, at the request of theſe lords, and the ducheſs of Brabant, although he intended to act contrary, gave his terms of accommodations; and theſe conferences were fixed for the end of Eaſter, at Tournay, in the year 1382.

Twelve deputies came from the biſhoprick of Liege and the chief towns, with ſir Lambert de Perney, a very diſcreet knight. The ducheſs of Brabant ſent her council thither, and ſome of the principal inhabitants from the great towns. Duke Albert met likewiſe his council from Hainault, his bailiff, ſir Simon de Lalain, with others. All theſe came to Tournay in Eaſter-week; and Ghent ſent alſo twelve deputies, of whom Philip von Artaveld was the head. The inhabitants of Ghent had reſolved to accede

accede to whatever terms their deputies should agree on, with the exception that no one was to be put to death; but that if it pleaſed the earl, their lord, he might banish from Ghent, and the country of Flanders, all thoſe who were diſagreeable to him, and whom he might wiſh to punish, without any poſſibility of their return. This reſolution they had determined to abide by; and Philip von Artaveld was willing, if he ſhould have angered the earl ever ſo little, during the time he was governor of Ghent, to be one of the baniſhed men, for life, out of the regard he had for the lower ranks of people.

Certain it is, that when he ſet out from Ghent for Tournay, men, women and children caſt themſelves before him on their knees, and with uplifted hands, beſought him, that at whatever coſt it might be, he would bring them back peace; and, from the pity he felt for them, he had agreed to act as I have juſt related.

When the deputies from Liege, Brabant and Hainault, who had been ſent to Tournay as mediators, had reſided there three days expecting the earl, who neither came nor ſent; they were much ſurpriſed, and, conſulting together, reſolved to ſend to him at Bruges. In conſequence, they diſpatched thither ſir Lambert de Perney, the lord de Compellant from Brabant, ſir William de Hermen from Hainault and ſix citizens from the three countries. The earl of Flanders entertained them handſomely, as was right, but told them, 'that at that moment, it was not agreeable to him to come to Tournay;

yet

yet, in conſideration for the cauſe which had brought them thither, and the trouble they had taken to come to Bruges, as well as out of reſpect to their lords, the ducheſs of Brabant his ſiſter, duke Albert his couſin and the biſhop of Liege, he would inſtantly ſend his council to Tournay with his final declaration, and what were his future intentions." They therefore returned to Tournay, and related what the earl had ſaid.

Six days afterwards, arrived at Tournay, by orders of the earl, the lord de Raſeflez, the lord de Gontris, ſir John Villame and the provoſt of Harlebecque, who made excuſes from the earl why he came not in perſon. They then delivered the earl's determination, that the inhabitants of Ghent were not to expect peace from him, unleſs all perſons, from the age of fifteen to ſixty, ſubmitted to come out of that city, bare headed in their ſhirts, with halters about their necks, on the road between Ghent and Bruges, where the earl would wait for them, and grant them pardon, or put them to death according to his pleaſure.

When this anſwer was carried by the deputies of the three countries to thoſe of Ghent, they were more confounded than ever. The bailiff of Hainault, then, addreſſing them, ſaid,—'My good gentlemen, you are in great peril, as you may each of you judge, and we can aſſure you of it: now, if you accept theſe terms, he will not put all to death that ſhall preſent themſelves before him, but only ſome who have angered him more than the reſt; and means may be found to mollify him, and excite his compaſſion; ſo that thoſe who

who may think themſelves certain of death will be pardoned: accept, therefore, theſe offers, or at leaſt conſider well before you refuſe them; for I believe you will never have ſuch made to you again.'

Philip von Artaveld replied,—'We are not commiſſioned to treat on ſuch terms by our townſmen, nor will they ever accept them; but if the citizens in Ghent, upon our return, after having informed them of the anſwer from the earl, ſhall be willing to ſubmit themſelves, it ſhall not be our fault that peace is not made. We give you our beſt and warmeſt thanks for the great trouble and pains you have taken in this buſineſs.'

They then took leave of thoſe well-intentioned perſons, and the other deputies from the principal towns of the three countries, and ſhewed plainly that they would not accept of the offered terms for peace. Philip von Artaveld and his companions went to their hotels, diſcharged their bills, and returned through Brabant to Ghent.

Thus was this conference broken up, which had been aſſembled with the beſt intentions, in the town of Tournay, and each man returned to his home. The earl of Flanders never made an inquiry what was the anſwer of the Ghent deputies, ſo very cheap did he hold them. He wiſhed not for any treaty of peace; for he well knew he had puſhed them ſo hard they could not hold out againſt him much longer, and that the end muſt be honourable to him: he was also deſirous to reduce Ghent to ſuch a ſituation that all other towns might take warning from it.

About this period the Pariſians again roſe, becauſe

cauſe the king did not reſide among them. They were afraid leſt he ſhould order his men at arms to force the gates of the city in the night-time, overrun it, and put to death whomſoever he pleaſed. To avoid this danger which they dreaded, they kept great guards in all the ſtreets and ſquares every night, and barricaded the ſtreets with chains, to prevent any cavalry from paſſing; nor would they ſuffer any one on foot to paſs: and thoſe found in the ſtreets after nine o'clock, who were not acknowledged by them or their partiſans were put to death.

There were in the city of Paris upwards of thirty thouſand rich and powerful men armed, from head to foot, and ſo handſomely arrayed that few knights could afford to rival them. They had, in like manner, armed their ſervants, who had mallets of iron and lead for the bruiſing of helmets. They ſaid in Paris, when they were muſtering their men, that they were ſufficient in number and ſtrength to fight their own battles, without the aid of the greateſt lord on the earth. Theſe people were called the army of mallets.

CHAP. XV.

THE CITIZENS OF GHENT, AFTER HAVING HEARD FROM PHILIP VON ARTAVELD THE TERMS OF PEACE WHICH HE HAD BROUGHT FROM THE CONFERENCES AT TOURNAY, MARCH OUT, TO THE NUMBER OF FIVE THOUSAND, TO ATTACK THE EARL OF FLANDERS IN BRUGES.

WHEN Philip von Artaveld and his companions returned to Ghent, great crowds of the common people, who only wiſhed for peace, were much rejoiced on his arrival, and hoped to hear from him good news. They went out to meet him, ſaying, 'Ah, dear Phillip von Artaveld, make us happy: tell us what you have done, and how you have ſucceeded.'

Philip made no anſwer to theſe queſtions, but rode on, holding down his head: the more ſilent he was, the more they followed him, and were the more clamorous. Once or twice, as he was advancing to his houſe, he ſaid, 'Get you to your homes, and may God preſerve you from harm: to-morrow morning be in the market-place by nine o'clock, and there you ſhall hear every thing.' As they could not obtain any other anſwer, the people were exceedingly alarmed.

When Philip von Artaveld had diſmounted at his door, and his companions were returned to their homes, Peter du Bois, anxious lo learn what

what had been done, came in the evening to Phillip, and, having ſhut himſelf in a chamber with him, aſked what ſucceſs he had met with. Philip, who wiſhed to hide nothing from him, replied,—'By my faith, Peter, from the anſwer which my lord of Flanders has given by thoſe of his council whom he ſent to Tournay, he will not pardon a ſoul in Ghent; no not one.' 'By my troth,' ſaid Peter du Bois, 'he is in the right, and has been wiſely adviſed to ſend ſuch an anſwer; for we are all equally implicated one as much as another. I have ſucceeded in my expectation; for the town of Ghent is in ſuch confuſion that it cannot well be appeaſed. We muſt become deſperate, and it ſhall be ſeen if there be not prudent and valiant men in Ghent. In a few days, the town of Ghent ſhall be the moſt reſpected town in Chriſtendom, or the moſt humbled. However, if we do periſh in this quarrel, we ſhall not die alone. You muſt now, Philip, conſider how you will relate the conferences of Tournay tomorrow, ſo that every one may be ſatisfied with your conduct. You are at this moment in high favour with the people, for two reaſons; one, on account of the name you bear, for Jacob von Artaveld, your father, was formerly much beloved in this town; the other, from the gentle and friendly manner with which you addreſs them, which they publicly praiſe: they will therefore firmly believe every thing you ſhall tell them; and, towards the end, you ſhall add, 'If I were to adviſe, I would do ſo and ſo:' but it is neceſſary

you conſider this well, ſo that you ſtand on ſure grounds and gain honour by it.'

'Peter,' ſaid Philip von Artaveld, 'you ſpeak truth; and I think I ſhall be able to explain and harangue in ſuch a manner on the affairs of Ghent that, between ourſelves, we who are the governors and leaders in Ghent ſhall live and die with honour.' Nothing more was ſaid or done at that time, for they ſeparated: Peter du Bois returned to his houſe, and Philip remained where he was.

You may eaſily imagine, when the day ſo eagerly expected was come, in which Philip was to report what had paſſed in the conferences at Tournay, that all the inhabitants of Ghent were early in the market place. It was on a Wedneſday morning, and the time of meeting nine o'clock.

Philip von Artaveld, Peter du Bois, Peter le Nuitre, Francis Atremen, and the other chiefs came there; and, having entered the town-hall, they aſcended the ſtaircaſe, when Philip, ſhewing himſelf from the windows, thus ſpoke: 'My good friends, it is true, that through the entreaties of the very noble lady the ducheſs of Brabant, the moſt puiſſant and noble prince duke Albert, regent of Hainault, Holland and Zealand, and of my lord the biſhop of Liege, a conference was appointed to be holden at Tournay theſe laſt days, which the earl of Flanders was perſonally to attend, and which he had promiſed to the noble perſons juſt mentioned, who have indeed moſt handſomely acquitted themſelves. They ſent thither

ther their moſt able counſellors, and the principal inhabitants from the greateſt towns, who waited ſeveral days in expectation of the earl of Flanders; but he came not, nor indeed ſent any excuſes. When they perceived this, they reſolved to chooſe three knights from the three countries, and ſix citizens, and ſend them to him. Out of affection to us they undertook the buſineſs, and went to Bruges, where they found my lord of Flanders, who entertained them well, as they ſaid, and willingly liſtened to them: he then declared, that out of reſpect to their lord, and to his ſiſter-in-law, madame de Brabant, he would ſend his council to Tournay in the courſe of five or ſix days, ſo well inſtructed, that they would clearly explain his determined intention, which when they ſhould hear, they would know how to act: not obtaining any other anſwer, they returned on the day appointed. In conſequence of this, the Lord de Raſeſlez, the lord de Gontris, ſir John Villames, and the provoſt of Harlebecque, came to Tournay, where they very graciouſly informed us of the will of the earl, and the only means of putting an end to this war. They declared his final terms for peace between him and the inhabitants of Ghent were, that every male inhabitant, excepting prieſts and monks, from the age of ſixteen to that of ſixty, ſhould march out of the towns in their ſhirts, with bare heads and feet, and halters about their necks, and ſhould thus go two leagues or more to the plains of Burleſquans, where they would meet the earl of Flanders, attended by ſuch whom he may

chooſe

chooſe to bring with him; and that, when he ſhould ſee us in this ſituation, with joined hands, crying out for mercy, he would, if he pleaſed, take compaſſion on us. But I could not learn from his council, that there was the leaſt plea of juſtice to put to death ſuch numbers of people as would be there that day. Now, conſider if you will have peace on theſe terms?'

When Philip had done ſpeaking, it was a melancholy ſight to behold men, women and children, bewailing, with tears, their huſbands, fathers, brothers and neighbours. After this tumult and noiſe had laſted ſome time, Philip again addreſſed them, and cried out, 'Silence, ſilence!' when, on his beginning to ſpeak, they ceaſed lamenting,—'Worthy inhabitants of Ghent, you who are here aſſembled, are the majority of its citizens, and you have heard all I had to report to you: I ſee no means of remedy but a determined conduct. You know how very much we are ſtraitened for all ſorts of proviſion, and that there are thirty thouſand perſons in this town, who, in fifteen days, will not have bread to eat. In my opinion, we have but the choice of three things; the firſt, that we cloſe all our gates, and then, after having confeſſed ourſelves, moſt fully, retire into the churches and monaſteries, and there die confeſſed and repentant, like martyrs, to whom no mercy has been shewn. In this ſtate God will have pity on us, and on our ſouls; and wherever this shall be told or heard, they will ſay, that we died nobly, like loyal men at arms.

'Or,

'Or, let us reſolve to march out, men, women and children, with halters about our necks, bare-headed, and with naked feet, and implore the mercy of my lord the earl: he is not ſo hard-hearted, nor ſo obſtinate, but when he ſhall ſee us in ſuch an humiliating condition, he will be ſoftened, and take pity on his ſubjects; and I will be the firſt to offer him my head, in order to aſſuage his hatred, and ſacrifice myſelf for the city of Ghent.

'Or, let us chooſe from five to ſix thouſand of the moſt determined men in the town, and inſtantly march to attack the earl in Bruges; we will give him combat; and if we ſhould be ſlain in the attempt, at leaſt we ſhall die with honour, and God will have mercy upon us; and the world will ſay, that we have gallantly and valorouſly maintained our quarrel. If, however, in this battle we be victorious, and our Lord God, who in ancient times delegated his power into the hands of Judas Maccabeus, the chief of his Jewiſh people, ſo that the Syrians were defeated and ſlain, would be indulgent enough to grant us this kindneſs, we ſhould be every where the moſt honoured people ſince the time of the Romans. Now, conſider which of theſe three propoſitions you will make choice of, for one of them muſt be adopted.'

Thoſe who were near to him, and had moſt diſtinctly heard what he had ſaid, replied,—'Ah, dear lord, we put our whole confidence in you; what would you adviſe us? for we will do whatever you think will be moſt for our advantage.'

'By

'By my faith' then,' ſaid Philip, 'I would adviſe that we all march in arms againſt my lord. We ſhall find him at Bruges; and, when he hears of our coming, he will ſally forth and fight with us: for the pride of thoſe in Bruges and about his perſon, who excite him day and night againſt us, will urge him to the combat. If God ſhall, through his mercy, grant that we gain the field, and defeat our enemies, our affairs will be inſtantly retrieved, and we ſhall be the moſt reſpected people in the univerſe. If we be defeated, we ſhall die honourably, and God will have pity on us; and the remainder of the inhabitants of Ghent will finiſh this buſineſs, and be pardoned by the earl our lord.'

At theſe words, they all ſhouted out, 'We will follow this plan, and no other!' Philip then ſaid,—'My good gentlemen, ſince you are thus reſolved, return home and get ready your arms; for in the courſe of to-morrow, I am determined to march for Bruges: the remaining longer here will not be to our advantage. Within five days we ſhall know if we be to die, or to live with honour. I will order the conſtables of the different pariſhes to go from houſe to houſe, and chooſe the beſt armed and thoſe moſt fit for the ſervice.'

Immediately after the meeting broke up, and every one returned home to make ready, each according to his abilities, they kept the gates of the town ſo cloſely ſhut that no perſon whatever was ſuffered to come in or go out before Thurſday afternoon, when thoſe who were to march on this

expedition

expedition were prepared: in all, about five thouſand men, and not more.

They loaded about two hundred carts with cannon and artillery, and only ſeven with proviſions; that is, five with bread and two with wine, for there were but two tuns of wine in the town. You may judge from this to what ſtraits they had been reduced.

It was a miſerable ſpectacle to ſee thoſe who went, and thoſe who remained. Theſe laſt ſaid to them,—'Good friends, you ſee what you leave behind; but never think of returning unleſs you can do ſo with honour, for you will not find any thing here. The moment we hear of your defeat, or death, we will ſet fire to the town, and perish in the flames, like men in deſpair.'

Thoſe who were marching out replied, by way of comforting them,—'What you ſay is very juſt. Pray God for us; for we place our hopes in him, and truſt he will aſſiſt you, as well as us, before our return.'

Thus did theſe five thouſand men of Ghent march off with their ſlender ſtores, and encamped about a league from Ghent, but touched not their proviſion, taking up with what they could find in the country. On Friday, they marched the whole day, and then meddled not with their ſtores; but their ſcouts picked up ſome few things in the country, with which they made ſhift, and fixed their quarters that evening a long league from Bruges.

They halted there, conſidering it a proper place to wait for their enemies, for there were in front

front two extenſive marſhes, which were a good defence on one ſide; and they fortified themſelves on the others with the carriages, and thus paſſed the night.

CHAP. XVI.

THE ORDER OF BATTLE OF THE GHENT MEN.—THEY DEFEAT THE EARL OF FLANDERS AND THE MEN OF BRUGES.—THE MEANS BY WHICH THIS WAS BROUGHT ABOUT.

THE Saturday* was a fine bright day, and, being the feaſt of the Holy Croſs, the inhabitants of Bruges, according to cuſtom, made their uſual proceſſions. News was ſoon brought to Bruges, that the Ghent army was near at hand; ſo that every one began to murmur until the earl heard it, as well as thoſe about his perſon.

He was much ſurpriſed, and ſaid, 'See how the wickedneſs of theſe mad and fooliſh people of Ghent leads them to their deſtruction: indeed it is time this war ſhould be put an end to.' His knights, and others, inſtantly waited on him, whom he very graciouſly received, and ſaid, 'We will go and fight theſe wicked people: however,

* The 3d of May. See l'Art de Verifier les Dates.

they

they ſhew courage in preferring death by the ſword, rather than famine.'

They determined to ſend out three men at arms, to examine the force and ſituation of the enemy. The marshal of Flanders ordered three valiant ſquires on this ſervice, whoſe names were Lambert de Lambres, Damas de Buffy, and John de Béart: they ſet out, mounted on the finest horſes in the town, and advanced toward the Ghent army. While this was going forward, every perſon in Bruges made himſelf ready, and shewed the most eager deſire to ſally forth and combat the men of Ghent; of whom I will now ſay a word, and of the manner in which they had drawn themſelves up.

On the Saturday morning, Philip von Artaveld ordered his whole army to pay their devotions to God, and maſſes to be ſaid in different places; (for there were with them ſeveral monks,) that every man should confeſs himſelf, and make other becoming preparations, and that they should pray to God with that truth, as people looking to him alone for mercy.

All this was done, and maſs celebrated in ſeven different places. After each maſs was a ſermon, which laſted an hour and an half: the monks and prieſts endeavoured, by their diſcourſes, to shew the great ſimilitude between them and the people of Iſrael, whom Pharaoh, king of Egypt, detained ſo long in ſlavery, and who, through God's grace, were delivered, and conducted by Moſes and Aaron into the land of promiſe, whilſt Pharaoh, and the Egyptians were drowned.

drowned. 'In like manner, my good people,' preached the monks, 'have you been kept in bondage by your lord, the earl of Flanders, and by your neighbours of Bruges, whom you are now to meet, and by whom you will, without doubt, be combated, for your enemies are in great numbers, and have little fear of your force; but do not you mind this; for God who can do all things, and is acquainted with your ſituation, will have mercy on you: therefore, think of nothing but what you have left behind; for you well know, that every thing is lost, if you be defeated. Sell yourſelves well and valiantly; and if you muſt die, die with honour. Do not be alarmed, if great numbers iſſue forth from Bruges againſt you, for victory is not to the multitude, but whither God ſhall pleaſe to ſend it; and, by his grace, it has been often ſeen, as well by the Maccabees as the Romans, that thoſe who fought manfully, and confided in God, diſcomfited the greater number. Beſides, you have juſtice and reaſon on your ſide, in this quarrel, which ought to make you feel yourſelves bold and better comforted.'

In ſuch words as theſe, the prieſts had been ordered to preach to the army, and with theſe diſcourſes they were well pleaſed. Three parts of them communicated, and all ſhewed great devotion and much fear in God.

After the ſermons, the whole army aſſembled round a ſmall hill, on which Philip von Artaveld placed himſelf, in order to be the better heard, and harangued them very ably, explaining to them every point in which they were juſtified in this

this war; and how Ghent had frequently ſought pardon from the earl, and never could obtain it, without ſubmitting to conditions too hard for the town and its inhabitants: that now they had advanced ſo far they could not retreat; and that, if they would conſider, they would ſee nothing could be gained were they to return, for all they had left behind were in ſorrow and miſery. They ought not, therefore, to think of Ghent, their wives and children who were in it, but to act in ſuch manner as was becoming their honour.

Philip von Artaveld addreſſed many more fine ſpeeches to them; for he was very eloquent, and had words at command, which was fortunate for him, and towards the end he added; 'My good friends, you ſee here all your proviſion: divide it among you fairly, like brethren, without any diſturbance; for when it is gone, you muſt conquer more, if you wiſh to live.'

At theſe words they drew up very regularly, and unloaded the carts, when the bags of bread were given out, to be divided by conſtablewicks, and the two tuns of wine placed on their bottoms; and there they moderately breakfaſted, each man having a ſufficiency at that time; after which breakfaſt they found themſelves more determined and active on their feet, than if they had eaten more.

This repaſt being over, they put themſelves in order, and retired within their ribaudeaus. Theſe ribaudeaus are tall ſtakes, with points ſhod with iron, which they were always accuſtomed to carry

carry with them. They fixed them in front of their army, and incloſed themſelves within.

The three knights who had been ſent by the earl to reconnoitre, found them in this ſituation: they approached the entrances of theſe ribaudeaus; but the Ghent men never moved, and rather ſeemed rejoiced to ſee them.

They returned to Bruges, where they found the earl in his palace, ſurrounded by many knights, waiting for them, to hear what intelligence they had brought back. They pushed through the crowd, and came near the earl, when they ſpoke aloud, for the earl wished all preſent to hear, and ſaid, 'they had advanced ſo cloſe to the Ghent army, that they might have shot at them, if they had ſo choſen, but they left them in peace; and that they had ſeen their banners, and the army incloſed within their ribaudeaus.'

'And what are their numbers, think ye?' ſaid the earl. They anſwered, 'that as near as they could gueſs, they might be from five to ſix thouſand.' 'Well,' ſaid the earl, 'now let every one instantly get ready; for I will give them battle, and this day shall not paſs without a combat.' At theſe words the trumpet ſounded in Bruges, when every one armed himſelf, and made for the market-place. As they came, they drew up under their proper banners, as they had uſually done, in bands and constablewicks.

Many barons, knights and men at arms, drew up before the palace of the earl. When all was ready,

ready, and the earl armed, he came to the market place, and was much pleaſed to ſee ſuch numbers in battle-array. They then marched off, for none dared diſobey his commands; and, in order of battle, made for the plain: the men at arms afterwards iſſued forth from Bruges.

It was a handſome fight, for there were upwards of forty thouſand armed heads; and thus horſe and foot advanced in proper order, near to the place were the Ghent men were, and then halted. It was late in the afternoon when the earl and his army arrived, and the ſun going down. One of the knights ſaid to the earl; 'My lord, you now ſee your enemies: they are but a handful of men in compariſon with your army, and as they cannot eſcape do not engage them this day; but wait for to-morrow, when you will have the day before you: you will, beſides, have more light to ſee what you are about, and they will be weaker, for they have not any thing to eat.'

The earl approved much this advice, and would willingly have followed it; but the men of Bruges, impatient to begin the fight, would not wait, ſaying, they would ſoon defeat them and return back to their town.

Notwithſtanding the orders of the men at arms, for the earl had not leſs than eight hundred lances, knights and ſquires, the Bruges men began to ſhoot and to fire cannons.

The Ghent men, being collected in a body on an eminence, fired at once three hundred cannon; after which they turned the marſh, and placed the

Bruges

Bruges men with the ſun in their eyes, which much diſtreſſed them, and then fell upon them, ſhouting out, 'Ghent!' The moment the men of Bruges heard the cannon and the cry of Ghent, and ſaw them marching to attack them in front, they, like cowards, opened their ranks, and letting the Ghent men paſs without making any defence, flung down their staves and ran away.

The Ghent men were in cloſe order, and, perceiving their enemies were defeated, began to knock down and kill on all ſides. They advanced with a quick step, shouting, 'Ghent!' and ſaying, 'Let us purſue briſkly our enemies, who are defeated, and enter the town with them: God eyes us this day with looks of pity.'

They followed thoſe of Bruges with ſo much courage that, whenever they knocked down or killed any one, they marched on without halting or quitting the purſuit, whilst the men of Bruges fled with the haste of a defeated army. I must ſay, that at this place there were multitudes of ſlain, wounded and thrown down; for they made no defence, and never were ſuch cowardly wretches as thoſe of Bruges, or who more weakly or recreantly behaved themſelves, after all their inſolence when they first took the field. Some may wish to excuſe them by ſuppoſing there might have been treaſon, which cauſed this defeat. This was not ſo; but ſuch poor and weak conduct fell on their own heads.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

BRUGES IS TAKEN BY THE GHENT ARMY.—THE EARL OF FLANDERS SAVES HIMSELF IN THE HOUSE OF A POOR WOMAN.

WHEN the earl of Flanders and the men at arms ſaw that, by the miſerable defence of the men of Bruges, they had cauſed their own defeat, and that there was not any remedy for it, for every man was running away as faſt as he could, they were much ſurpriſed, and began to be alarmed for themſelves, and to make off in different directions. It is true, that had they ſeen any probability of recovering the loſs which the Bruges men were ſuffering, they would have done ſome deeds of arms, by which they might have rallied them a little: but they ſaw it was hopeleſs, for they were flying to Bruges in all directions, and neither the ſon waited for the father nor the father for his child.

The men at arms, therefore, began to break their ranks. Few had any deſire to return to Bruges, for the crowd was ſo great on the road thither that it was painful to ſee and hear the complaints of the wounded and hurt. The men of Ghent were cloſe at their heels, shouting out, "Ghent, Ghent!" knocking down all that obſtructed them. The greater part of theſe men at

arms had never before been in ſuch peril: even the earl was adviſed to make for Bruges, and to have the gates cloſed and guarded, ſo that the Ghent men ſhould not be able to force them and become maſters of the town.

The earl of Flanders ſaw no help for his men, who were flying on all ſides, and, as it was now dark night, followed this advice and took the road to Bruges, his banner diſplayed before him. He entered the gates one of the firſt, with about forty others, for no more had followed him. He ordered guards to defend the gates if the Ghent men ſhould come thither, and then rode to his palace, from whence he iſſued a proclamation, that every perſon, under pain of death, ſhould aſſemble in the market-place. The intention of the earl was to ſave the town by this means; but it did not ſucceed, as you ſhall hear.

While the earl was in his palace, and had ſent the clerks of the different trades from ſtreet to ſtreet, to haſten the inhabitants to the market-place, in order to preſerve the city, the men of Ghent, having cloſely purſued their enemies, entered the town with them, and inſtantly made for the market-place, without turning to the right or left, where they drew themſelves up in array.

Sir Robert Mareſchaut, one of the earl's knights, had been ſent to the gates, to ſee they were guarded: but, while the earl was planning means for defending the town, ſir Robert found a gate flung off its hinges, and the Ghent men maſters of it. Some of the citizens ſaid to him; 'Robert, Robert,

Robert, return and ſave yourſelf, if you can, for the Ghent men have taken the town.'

The knight returned as ſpeedily as he could to the earl, whom he met coming out of his palace on horſeback, with a number of torches. The knight told him what he had heard; but, notwithstanding this, the earl, anxious to defend the town, advanced toward the market-place, and as he was entering it with a number of torches, shouting out, 'Flanders for the Lyon! Flanders for the Earl!' thoſe near his horſe and about his perſon, ſeeing the place full of Ghent men, ſaid,—'My lord, return; for if you advance further you will be ſlain, or at the best made priſoner by your enemies, as they are drawn up in the ſquare and are waiting for you.'

They told him truth; for the Ghent men, ſeeing the great blaze of torches in the street, ſaid, 'Here comes my lord, here comes the earl: how he falls into our hands!' Philip von Artaveld had given orders to his men, that if the earl ſhould come, every care was to be taken to preſerve him from harm, in order that he might be carried alive and in good health to Ghent, when they ſhould be able to obtain what peace they choſe.

The earl had entered the ſquare, near to where the Ghent men were drawn up, when ſeveral people came to him and ſaid,—'My lord, do not come further; for the Ghent men are maſters of the market-place and of the town, and if you advance, you will run a riſk of being taken.

Numbers of them are now ſearching for their enemies from ſtreet to ſtreet, and many of the men of Bruges have joined them, who conduct them from Hôtel to Hôtel to ſeek thoſe whom they want. You cannot paſs any of the gates without danger of being killed, for they are in their poſſeſſion; nor can you return to your palace, for a large rout of Ghent men have marched thither.'

When the earl heard this ſpeech, which was heart-breaking as you may gueſs, he began to be much alarmed and to ſee the peril he was in. He reſolved to follow the advice of not going further, and to ſave himſelf if he could, which was confirmed by his own judgment. He ordered the torches to be extinguiſhed, and ſaid to thoſe about him,—'I ſee clearly that affairs are without remedy: I therefore give permiſſion for every one to depart and ſave himſelf in the beſt manner he can.' His orders were obeyed. The torches were put out, and thrown in the ſtreets; and all who were in company with the earl ſeparated and went away. He himſelf went to a bye-ſtreet, where he was diſarmed by his ſervant, and, throwing down his clothes, put on his ſervant's, ſaying,—'Go about thy buſineſs, and ſave thyſelf if thou canſt; but be ſilent if thou fall into the hands of my enemies; and if they aſk thee any thing about me, do not give them any information.' 'My lord,' replied the valet, 'I will ſooner die.'

The earl of Flanders thus remained alone, and it may be truly ſaid he was in the greateſt danger

ger; for it was over with him if he had at that hour, by any accident, fallen into the hands of the mob, who were going up and down the ſtreets, ſearching every houſe for the friends of the earl; and whomſoever they found they carried before Philip von Artaveld and the other captains in the market-place, when they were inſtantly put to death. It was God alone who watched over him, and delivered him from this peril: for no one had ever before been in ſuch imminent danger, as I ſhall preſently relate.

The earl inwardly bewailed his ſituation from ſtreet to ſtreet at this late hour, for it was a little paſſed midnight, and he dared not enter any houſe, leſt he ſhould be ſeized by the mobs of Ghent and Bruges. Thus, as he was rambling through the ſtreets, he at laſt entered the houſe of a poor woman, a very unfit habitation for ſuch a lord, as there were neither halls nor apartments, but a ſmall houſe, dirty and ſmoky, and as black as jet: there was only in this place, one poor chamber, over which was a ſort of a garret that was entered by means of a ladder of ſeven ſteps, where, on a miſerable bed, the children of this woman lay.

The earl entered this houſe with fear and trembling, and ſaid to the woman, who was alſo much frightened,—'Woman, ſave me: I am thy lord, the earl of Flanders; but at this moment I muſt hide myſelf for my enemies are in purſuit of me; and I will handſomely reward thee for the favour thou ſheweſt me.'

The poor woman knew him well, for ſhe had frequently

frequently received alms at his door; and had often ſeen him paſs and repaſs, when he was going to ſome amuſement, or hunting. She was ready with her anſwers, in which God aſſiſted the earl: for had ſhe delayed it ever ſo little, they would have found him in converſation with her by the fire-ſide. 'My lord, mount this ladder, and get under the bed in which my children ſleep.' This he did, while ſhe employed herſelf by the fire-ſide, with another child in a cradle.

The earl of Flanders mounted the ladder as quickly as he could, and, getting between the ſtraw and the coverlid, hid himſelf, and contracted his body into as little ſpace as poſſible. He had ſcarcely done ſo, when ſome of the mob of Ghent entered the houſe; for one of them had ſaid, he had ſeen a man go in there. They found this woman ſitting by the fire, nurſing her child, of whom they demanded, 'Woman, where is the man we ſaw enter this houſe, and ſhut the door after him?' 'By my troth,' replied ſhe, 'I have not ſeen any one enter here this night; but I have juſt been at the door to throw out ſome water, which I then ſhut after me; beſides, I have not any place to hide him in, for you ſee the whole of this houſe: here is my bed, and my children ſleep overhead.'

Upon this one of them took a candle, and mounted the ladder, and, thruſting his head into the place, ſaw nothing but the wretched bed in which the children were aſleep. He looked all about him, above and below, and then ſaid to his companions, 'Come, come, let us go: we only

only loſe our time here: the poor woman ſpeaks truth: there is not a ſoul but herſelf and her children.' On ſaying this, they left the houſe and went into another quarter; and no one afterwards entered it, who had bad intentions.

The earl of Flanders, hearing all this converſation as he lay hid, you may eaſily imagine, was in the greateſt fear of his life. In the morning he could have ſaid he was one of the moſt powerful princes in Chriſtendom, and that ſame night he felt himſelf one of the ſmalleſt. One may truly ſay, that the fortunes of this world are not ſtable. It was fortunate for him to ſave his life; and this miraculous eſcape ought to be to him a remembrance his whole lifetime.

We will now leave the earl of Flanders, and ſpeak of Bruges, and how the Ghent men proſpered.

CHAP. XVIII.

THE GHENT MEN SPARE THE FOREIGN MERCHANTS IN BRUGES.—THE EARL OF FLANDERS QUITS BRUGES, AND RETURNS TO LILLE, WHITHER SOME OF HIS PEOPLE HAD ALREADY RETREATED.

FRANCIS Atremen was one of the principal leaders of the mob. He was ordered by Philip von Artaveld and Peter du Bois, to ſearch the town of Bruges, and guard the market-place, until they ſhould find themſelves complete maſters of the town. He was particularly commanded to ſuffer

ſuffer no harm to be done to foreign merchants, or other ſtrangers then at Bruges, for they had nothing to do with their quarrels. This order was very well obſerved, and neither Francis nor any of his company did the ſmalleſt hurt to a foreigner.

The ſearch of the Ghent men was eſpecially directed to the four trades, of jerkin-makers, glaſſmen, butchers, and fishermen; for they had reſolved to put to death all whom they should find of theſe different trades, becauſe they had been partiſans of the earl of Flanders at Oudenarde, and other places. They ſought for them every where, and when they found any, they were killed without mercy.

There were upwards of twelve hundred, one with the other, ſlain this night; and many murders and robberies committed, which were never known: ſeveral houſes robbed, and women and girls violated; coffers broken open, and a variety of wicked deeds done; inſomuch, that the poorest of the Ghent army became very rich.

On the Monday morning the happy news, of the defeat of the earl and his army, was brought to Ghent; that their men had not only conquered them, but alſo the town of Bruges, of which they were now masters. You may gueſs the joy the people felt, who had been ſo lately in the greatest tribulation: they made many proceſſions to the church to return thanksgivings to God for the mercy he had shewn them, and for the victory he had given to their army. Every day

there

there came good news, which ſo much delighted them, they hardly knew what they were about. I mention this; for had the lord de Harzelles, who had remained in Ghent, marched that Sunday, or the Monday morning, with three or four thouſand men to Oudenarde, he would inſtantly have conquered it: they were in ſuch conſternation at the ſucceſs of the Ghent men, that they were on the point of quitting the town, to ſave themſelves in Hainault, or elſewhere, and had made preparations for ſo doing. But when they perceived the Ghent people did not come, nor had any intelligence reſpecting them, they recovered their courage. The knights who were there, ſuch as ſir John Bernage, ſir Thierry du Ban, and ſir Fleuriant de Heurlée, guarded and comforted them, until the arrival of ſir Damos de Haluin, who was ſent thither by the earl, as I ſhall relate when I come to that period.

No people ever behaved themſelves better towards their enemies than the men of Ghent did to thoſe of Bruges, nor conducted themſelves more graciouſly to a conquered town: they did no harm to any of the ſmall tradeſmen unleſs there were very ſtrong accuſations againſt them.

When Philip von Artaveld, Peter du Bois and the other captains ſaw they were completely maſters of the place, they iſſued out a proclamation in their name for all perſons to retire to their houſes, and that no one ſhould break open or pillage any houſe, nor be any way inſtrumental in raiſing of riots, under pain of death.

They then inquired what had become of the earl:

earl: ſome ſaid, he had left the town on Saturday night: others that he was yet in Bruges, but ſo cloſely hid that he could not be found. The captains of the Ghent army paid no great attention to him; for they were ſo rejoiced at their victory that they thought nothing of any earl, baron or knight in Flanders, and looked on themſelves as ſo mighty that all the world muſt obey them.

Philip von Artaveld and Peter du Bois conſidered, that when they had quitted Ghent they had left it deſtitute of all proviſion, for there was neither corn nor wine in the town: they inſtantly detached a large party to Damme and Sluys to gain thoſe towns, and the proviſions which were in them, in order to ſupply their fellow-citizens in Ghent.

On the detachment arriving at Damme, the gates were thrown open, and the town with all in it ſurrendered. They ordered out of the fine cellars the wines of Poitou, Gaſcony, and la Rochelle, and from other diſtant countries, to the amount of ſix thouſand tuns, which they loaded on carriages and ſent by land to Ghent, and alſo by boats on the river Lis.

They then marched on to Sluys, which inſtantly ſubmitted to them and opened its gates. They found there great quantities of casks of corn and flour, in ships and in the ſtorehouſes of foreign merchants, and having paid for the whole, ſent it by land and water to Ghent. Thus was Ghent delivered from famine, through the mercy of God. It could not have happened otherwiſe, and well ought the Ghent men to remember it;

for

for that God aſſiſted them is very clear, when five thouſand famished men defeated forty thouſand, even before their own doors. They and their leaders ought to have humbled themſelves; however they did not, but rather increaſed their pride, inſomuch that God was angered with them, and punished their folly before the year was expired, as shall be related in the courſe of this hiſtory, for an example to the reſt of the world.

I was informed, and believe my authority good, that on the Sunday evening, when it was dark, the earl of Flanders eſcaped from Bruges. I am ignorant how he accomplished it, or if he had any aſſiſtance, but ſome I believe he muſt have had. He got out of the town on foot, clad in a miſerable jerkin, and when in the fields was quite joyous, as he might then ſay he had eſcaped from the utmost peril. He wandered a bout at first, and came to a thorn bush, to conſider whither he should go; for he was unacquainted with the roads or country, having never before travelled on foot.

As he lay thus hid under the bush, he heard ſome one talk, who by accident was one of his knights, that had married a baſtard daughter of his: his name was ſir Robert Mareſchaut. The earl, hearing him talk as he was passing, ſaid to him, 'Robert, art thou there?' The knight, who well knew his voice, replied; 'My lord, you have this day given me great uneaſiness in ſeeking for you all round Bruges: how were you able to eſcape?' 'Come, come, Robert,' ſaid the earl: 'this is not a time to tell one's adventures: endeavour

vour to get me a horſe, for I am tired with walking, and take the road to Lille, if thou knoweſt it.' 'My lord,' anſwered the knight, 'I know it well.' They then travelled all that night and the morrow until early morn, before they could procure a horſe. The firſt beaſt they could find was a mare, belonging to a poor man in a village.

The earl mounted the mare, without ſaddle or bridle, and travelling all Monday, came, towards evening, to the caſtle of Lille, whither the greater part of his knights who had eſcaped from the battle of Bruges had retired. They had got off as well as they could; ſome on foot, others on horſeback, but all did not follow this road: ſome went by water to Holland and Zealand, where they remained until they received better news.

Sir Guy de Guiſtelles was fortunate in getting into a good ſituation; for he found the count Guy de Blois in one of his towns in Zealand, who handſomely entertained him, and give him wherewithal to remount and equip himſelf again, retaining him with him as long as he choſe to ſtay. In a ſimilar manner were the diſcomfited knights remounted by thoſe lords to whom they had fled: they took great compaſſion on them, which was but juſtice, for nobles and gentlemen ought to be aſſiſted and comforted by each other.

CHAP. XIX.

THE CONDUCT OF THE GHENT MEN AT BRUGES. —ALL THE TOWNS IN FLANDERS SURRENDER TO THEM EXCEPT OUDENARDE.

NEWS was ſpread through all countries of the defeat which the earl of Flanders and the city of Bruges had ſuffered from Ghent. Many were rejoiced at it, more particularly the common people. Thoſe in the principal towns of Brabant and the bishoprick of Liege were ſo much connected with them that they were the more pleaſed, as it was partly their own concern. Thoſe of Paris and Rouen were equally delighted, though they dared not shew it openly.

When pope Clement heard the news, he muſed awhile and then ſaid, that this defeat was a rod from God, to make the earl take warning, and that he had ſent him this affliction, becauſe he had rebelled against him.

Several great lords in France, and other countries, ſaid, the earl was not much to be pitied if he ſuffered a little; for his preſumption was ſuch, that he neither valued nor loved any neighbouring lord, however great, neither king of France nor other, if not agreeable to him; on which account they felt the leſs for his diſtreſſes. Thus it falls

falls out; and as the proverb says, 'On him to whom misfortune happens, every one turns his back.'

The town of Louvain, in particular, shewed great joy at the victory of Ghent, and the misfortunes of the earl; for they were quarrelling with the duke of Brabant, their lord, who was inclined to make war on them, and pull down their gates; but they thought he would do better to remain quiet. They publicly said in the town of Louvain, that if Ghent were as near to them as Brussels, they would be closely united.

All these speeches were carried to the duke and duchess of Brabant; but it behoved them to shut their eyes and ears, for it was not the moment to notice them.

The Ghent men, during their residence at Bruges, made many innovations. They resolved to level two gates and the walls, and to fill up the ditches with them, that the inhabitants might be disabled from rebelling. They also determined, when they marched away, to take with them five hundred of the principal citizens to Ghent, to keep the town in greater fear and subjection.

Whilst the leaders were thus employed in destroying the gates and walls, and filling the ditches, they sent detachments to Ypres, Courtray, Bergues, Cassel, Poperingue, Bourbourg, and to all the towns and castles, in Flanders, on the sea-coast, and dependant on Bruges, to place them under their obedience, and to bring or send the keys of the castles and towns, as a token of their submission. All obeyed; for none dared to oppose

poſe them: and, according to the ſummons, they waited on Philip von Artaveld, and Peter du Bois at Bruges. Theſe two ſtiled themſelves commanders in chief in their proclamations; but particularly Philip von Artaveld, who took the lead in the government of Flanders, and, during his reſidence at Bruges, kept the ſtate of a prince. He had his minſtrels daily to play before him at his dinners and ſuppers; and was ſerved on plate, as if he had been earl of Flanders. Indeed he might well live in this magnificent manner, for he had poſſeſſed himſelf of all the plate, both gold and ſilver, that had belonged to the earl, as well as the jewels and furniture of his apartments, found in his palace at Bruges, whence nothing had been ſaved.

A detachment of the Ghent men was ſent to Marle, a handſome houſe belonging to the earl, ſituated half a league from Bruges, where they committed all ſorts of outrages. They deſtroyed the houſe, and broke the font at which the earl had been baptiſed; and, having laden on carts every thing that was precious, of gold, ſilver or jewels, ſent them to Ghent. During a whole fortnight, there were upwards of two hundred carts daily going and returning from Bruges to Ghent with the immenſe pillage which Philip von Artaveld and the Ghent men had made by this conqueſt of Bruges; the value of which was ſo great, that it was difficult to eſtimate its worth.

When the Ghent men had done every thing they willed to the city of Bruges, they ſent to Ghent

Ghent five hundred of its principal citizens, to remain there as hoſtages. Francis Atremen and Peter le Nuitre, eſcorted them with a thouſand of their men. Peter du Bois remained governor of Bruges, until the walls, gates and ditches, were completely levelled. Then Philip von Artaveld departed, taking the road towards Ypres; where, on his arrival; he was met by all manner of perſons, and received with as much honour as if he were their natural lord, who had come, for the firſt time, to view his inheritance.

All ſubmitted to his obedience. He renewed the powers of the mayor and ſheriffs, and eſtabliſhed new laws. Then came thoſe of the castlewicks, beyond Ypres, Caſſel, Bergues, Bourbourg, Furnes, Poperingue, who ſubmitted to him, and ſwore allegiance and homage, as to their lord, the earl of Flanders.

When he had fully aſſured himſelf of their ſubmiſſion, and had remained eight days at Ypres, he departed, and went to Courtray, where he was received with great joy. He continued there five days, and ſent his ſummons to the town of Oudenarde, ordering the citizens to come and ſubmit themſelves to him; for they riſked much, ſeeing the whole country had turned to Ghent, while they alone remained behind. The meſſengers alſo told them plainly, that if they did not do as the others had done, they might depend on having the town inſtantly beſieged; and that the ſiege would not be broken up until it were conquered, and all put to the ſword.

When

When this ſummons was brought to Oudenarde, the governor, ſir Damos de Halluin, was abſent, and only the three knights before mentioned in the place. They replied, with warmth, 'That they were not to be frightened by the menaces of the ſon of a brewer of Metheglin; and that they would not, and could not, ſurrender, or any way diminiſh, the inheritance of their lord, the earl of Flanders, but would guard and defend it with their lives.' This was the anſwer the meſſengers carried back to Courtray.

CHAP. XX.

PHILIP VON ARTAVELD, ON HIS RETURN TO GHENT, LIVES IN GREAT POMP.—THE EARL OF FLANDERS RESIDES IN LILLE.

WHEN Philip heard from the garriſon of Oudenarde, that they neither cared for him nor for his menaces, he ſwore, that whatever it might coſt the country of Flanders, he would not attend to any thing until he had taken and razed to the ground the town of Oudenarde. He was greatly enraged, and thought he might eaſily accompliſh his threats; for all Flanders was inclined to ſerve him.

After a reſidence of ſix days at Courtray, where he renewed the laws, and received the homage and allegiance of every one, juſt as if

He had been earl of Flanders, he returned to Ghent. There came out a grand proceſſion to meet him, and with ſuch joy that the earl, their lord was never received ſo honourably. The people adored him as if he had been their god, becauſe, through his advice, their town enjoyed ſuch power and wealth. It is impoſſible to tell the vaſt quantities of valuables which came thither by land and water from Bruges, Damme and Sluys. The bread, which three weeks before was ſold for an old groat, was now not worth more than four farthings. The wine which was at twenty-four groats, was now ſold for two. All things were much cheaper at Ghent than at Tournay or Valenciennes.

Philip von Artaveld, like a great prince, kept a magnificent eſtabliſhment of horſes, and was as grand in his hôtel, as the earl of Flanders was at Lille. He had his officers throughout Flanders, ſuch as bailiffs, governors, receivers and ſerjeants, who every week brought conſiderable ſums to Ghent, where he kept his ſtate, and was clothed in ſcarlet robes lined with furs, like the duke of Brabant or earl of Hainault. He had alſo his exchequer-chamber, where the money was paid, like to the earl; and he gave dinners and ſuppers to the ladies and damſels of Ghent, as the earl uſed to do; and, like him, was not more ſparing of his money where his pleaſures were concerned. When he wrote, he ſigned himſelf Philip von Artaveld, regent of Flanders.

During this time, the earl of Flanders, who reſided

reſided at Lille, had reaſon to be thoughtful, ſeeing that his country was more than ever in rebellion againſt him, and that from himſelf alone he had not any hopes of recovering it; for all the towns were ſo much connected with each other that they could never be ſeparated but by a very ſuperior force. The whole country no more ſpoke of him, nor acknowledged him for their lord, than if he had never exiſted. He now remembered his connection with the duke of Burgundy, who had married the lady Margaret his daughter, by whom he had two fine children. He ſaid he was happy king Charles was dead, and that there was a young king in France under the guardianſhip of his uncle the duke of Burgundy, who would manage and govern him according to his inclinations. It will be therefore natural for the king of France, as I ſhould ſuppoſe, to be enraged againſt my rebellious ſubjects; for he has good inclinations, and is deſirous of ſignaliſing himſelf in arms. The duke of Burgundy will eaſily induce him to do ſo, when he explains to him their inſolent pride, and that he is bound to aſſiſt his vaſſals when their ſubjects rebel.

But ſome imagine the king would not have interfered in the matter, if it had not been for the intrigues of the duke of Burgundy; for, if nothing had been done, he would have annexed Flanders to the crown of France by ſome means or other; for the earl of Flanders was not enough in his favour to induce him to exert himſelf in

his aid. We will, however drop at preſent this ſubject until the proper time come, and ſpeak of the earl of Flanders' conduct in Lille.

After his late great diſcomfiture before Bruges, he learnt that ſir Thierri du Ban, ſir Fleurant du Hurlée and ſir John Bernage, had entered Oudenarde, and kept poſſeſſion of it during all the events which had followed the defeat at Bruges. He well knew that theſe knights were not in ſufficient ſtrength to oppoſe the force of Flanders, if they ſhould lay ſiege to it, as it was expected they would inſtantly do. In order to reinforce and victual it, he called to him a knight, named ſir Daniel de Haluyn*, and ſaid to him; 'Daniel, you will go to the town of Oudenarde: I appoint you its governor, and you ſhall take with you one hundred and fifty lances, good men at arms, one hundred croſs-bows, and two hundred luſty varlets with pikes and ſhields. You will be careful of the garriſon, for I give it loyally into your charge; and haſten to victual it with corn, oats, ſalted meats, and wines from our good friends and neighbours in the town of Tournay, who I truſt will not fail us in this urgent neceſſity.'

'My lord,' replied the knight, 'your orders ſhall be obeyed; and I accept the guard of the town of Oudenarde, ſince it pleaſes you to command me. No accident ſhall happen to it

* Daniel de Haluyn. This muſt be the perſon whom he before calls Damos, and Damaux de Haluin.

through

through any fault of mine.' 'Daniel,' ſaid the earl, 'you comfort me much by what you ſay.'

Upon this, ſir Daniel de Haluyn took leave of the earl and went to Oudenarde, which he reinforced with good men at arms, victualled it again, and made every other neceſſary preparation.

CHAP. XXI.

PHILIP VON ARTAVELD AND THE GHENT MEN LAY SIEGE TO OUDENARDE.

PHILIP, who reſided in Ghent, hearing that the garriſon of Oudenarde had been reinforced with men at arms, ſaid he would provide a remedy, for ſuch things were not to be ſuffered: it was a diſgrace to all Flanders that that town ſhould continue thus diſobedient. He declared he would lay ſiege to it, and never march away until he had deſtroyed it, and put to death all who ſhould be found within, knights and others. He iſſued his ſummons through Flanders, for every one to be ready prepared before Oudenarde on the 9th day of June. None dared diſobey this ſummons: thoſe in the principal towns of Flanders, of the Franconate and of Bruges, made themſelves ready, and came before Oudenarde, where they extended themſelves in the fields, meadows and marſhes thereabouts. Philip, by whoſe orders every thing was done, lived in great ſtate before Oudenarde.

During

During this time, he laid a tax throughout Flanders of four groats on every fire, which were to be paid weekly, by all perſons indiſcriminately. Philip gained large ſums by this tax, for no one was exempted. He had his ſerjeants in all parts of the country, who made both rich and poor pay it, whether they would or not.

It was ſaid there were upwards of a hundred thouſand men at this ſiege of Oudenarde. The Flemings drove into the river Scheld large ſtakes, ſo that no veſſels could come from Tournay to Oudenarde, whilſt they had in their army plenty of every thing neceſſary. They had halls for cloth, furs and merceries: every Saturday was the market, to which were brought from the adjacent villages all ſorts of groceries, fruits, butter, milk, cheeſe, poultry, and other things. In their army there were taverns as plenty as at Bruſſels, where Rheniſh wines, and thoſe of France, Galrigaches*, Malmſeys and other foreign wines were ſold cheap. Every one might go thither, and paſs and repaſs, without peril; that is to ſay, thoſe of Brabant, Hainault, Germany and of Liege, but not thoſe of France.

When ſir Daniel de Haluyn entered Oudenarde, he laid in all his preparations of ſtores and proviſion, which were equally divided among the garriſon, each according to a fixed ration. All the horſes were ſent away, and the houſes near the walls pulled down, and covered with earth,

* Galrigaches,—a ſort of ſtrong white wine, or liqueur.

to

to guard againſt the cannon, of which the enemy had abundance. The women and children who remained (for many were ſent away) were lodged in the churches and monaſteries. No dog was left in the town, but all were killed and thrown into the river.

The garriſon made many gallant ſallies, both mornings and evenings, doing great execution to the army. There were among others two ſquires from Artois, brothers, called Lambert and Triſtan de Lambres, who frequently performed very gallant deeds of arms, bringing back with them proviſions from the enemy, whether they would or not, and even priſoners.

Thus they remained the whole ſummer. It was the intention of Philip and his council to continue until they ſhould ſtarve them out; for it would coſt them too many men were they to attempt to carry it by ſtorm. They with much labour placed on the hill of Oudenarde a prodigiouſly great engine, twenty feet wide and forty long, which they called a Mutton, to caſt heavy ſtones and beams of timber into the town, and cruſh every thing they ſhould fall on. They had alſo, the more to alarm the garriſon, fired a bombarde of a very great ſize, which was fifty feet in length, and ſhot ſtones of an immenſe weight. When they fired off this bombarde, it might be heard five leagues off in the day-time, and ten at night. The report of it was ſo loud, that it ſeemed as if all the devils in hell had broken looſe.

The Ghent men made likewiſe another engine, which they pointed againſt the town, to caſt large bars of hot copper. With ſuch machines, as cannons, bombardes, ſows and muttons, did the Ghent army labour to annoy the garriſon of Oudenarde. They, however, comforted each other as well as they could, and defended themſelves againſt theſe attacks. They made ſallies three or four times a-week, in which they gained more honour than diſgrace, and alſo more profit than loſs.

CHAP. XXII.

A DETACHMENT OF THE GHENT ARMY FROM BEFORE OUDENARDE, IN OVERRUNNING THE LANDS OF THEIR LORD, BURN SOME VILLAGES ON THE FRONTIERS OF FRANCE, WHICH CAUSES A WAR BETWEEN THE KING OF FRANCE AND THEM.

WHILST the ſiege of Oudenarde was going forward, eleven hundred men left the army, with a determination to ſcour the country, and to ruin and deſtroy the houſes of thoſe knights who, having quitted Flanders, had eſtabliſhed themſelves, with their wives and families, in Hainault, Brabant, and in Artois. They accompliſhed their purpoſe; for this detachment committed great damage throughout Flanders, not leaving any houſe of a gentleman unburnt, or ſtanding. They then came again to Marle, the

the houſe of the earl, and completely deſtroyed it. They found there the cradle in which he had been nurſed, and the bathing tub in which he had been waſhed, both of which they entirely demoliſhed. They pulled down the chapel, carrying away with them the bell to Bruges, where they met Peter du Bois, and Peter le Nuitre, who entertained them well, and told them they had performed good ſervices.

When theſe men had refreshed themſelves, they took the road to the bridge of Warneſton, croſſed the river Lis, and came before Lille, where they deſtroyed ſome windmills and ſet fire to other villages of Flanders. Upwards of four thouſand of the inhabitants of Lille armed themſelves, and ſallied out on horſeback and on foot, after theſe marauders, whom they ſoon overtook, ſlew many and ſeized others, who had afterwards their heads ſtruck off in Lille; but, had they been well purſued, not one of them would have eſcaped. Notwithſtanding this check, the detachment from the Ghent army entered the country of Tournay, where they did much miſchief, and burnt the town of Sechlin, and ſome of the adjacent villages which belong to the kingdom of France. They then returned with a very conſiderable booty, to the ſiege of Oudenarde.

News was carried to the duke of Burgundy, at Bapaume in Artois, how the Ghent men had pillaged and burnt ſome villages in France. He inſtantly wrote an account of it to his ſovereign, who

who at that time was at Compiegne, as well as to his brother the duke of Berry, to the duke of Bourbon, and to the king's council, that they might conſider of it. The duke of Burgundy wished not the Flemings to have acted otherwiſe; for he thought it would be now neceſſary to call on the king for aid, otherwiſe his father-in-law, the earl of Flanders, would never regain his inheritance: beſides, on every account, this war exaſperated him moſt exceedingly, for he was, in right of his wife, the heir of Flanders.

The earl of Flanders reſided at this moment at Hêdin. He there learnt that the Ghent men had deſtroyed his houſe at Marle, through ſpite to him, even the chamber wherein he was born, and had broken the font wherein he had been baptiſed, with the cradle of his childhood, which was of ſilver. The bathing tub wherein he had been washed was beaten to pieces and carried away. All this vexed him exceedingly. Whilſt at Hêdin he thought of different plans: for he ſaw his country had turned againſt him, except Dendremonde and Oudenarde, and no ſuccour to be looked for, but from France. Having weighed well all circumſtances, he reſolved to viſit his ſon the duke of Burgundy, who lived at Bapaume, and explain to him his ſituation.

He departed from Hêdin and went to Arras, where he repoſed himſelf two days. On the morrow he came to Bapaume, and diſmounted at the hôtel of the counts of Artois, which was now his own; for, by the death of his lady-mo-

ther,

ther, he was count of Artois. The duke of Burgundy took much compaſſion on him, and comforted him kindly, when he had heard his complaints, ſaying, 'My lord, by the faith I owe to you, and to the king, I will not attend to any thing but the recovery of your country. You ſhall be repoſſeſſed, or we will loſe the remainder; for it is not to be ſuffered that ſuch a ſet of ſcoundrels as are now in Flanders ſhould govern that country, as in that caſe all knighthood and gentility may be deſtroyed and pulled down, and conſequently all Chriſtianity.'

The earl of Flanders was much conſoled by the duke engaging to aſſiſt him. He took leave of him, and went to the city of Arras. At this time, he held in priſon upwards of two hundred perſons from the chief towns in Flanders, who had only bread and water for food; and every day they were threatened to loſe their heads. When the earl returned to Arras, he gave them all their liberties, in honour of GOD and the Virgin; for he found, from what had paſſed in Flanders after their impriſonment, that they were not any way to blame. He made them all ſwear to be true and loyal to him, and then gave them money to carry them to Lille or Douay, or wherever elſe they pleaſed. The earl gained much popularity by this meaſure. He then left Arras, and returned to Hêdin.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIII.

THE DUKE OF BURGUNDY INSTIGATES HIS NEPHEW KING CHARLES TO MAKE WAR ON GHENT AND ITS ALLIES, AS WELL IN REVENGE FOR THE BURNT VILLAGES AS TO ASSIST IN THE RECOVERY OF FLANDERS FOR THE EARL, WHO WAS HIS VASSAL.

THE duke of Burgundy was not forgetful of the engagements he had entered into with his lord and father the earl of Flanders. He fet out from Bapaume attended by ſir Guy de la Trimouille and ſir John de Vienne, admiral of France, who were very deſirous the earl ſhould be aſſiſted. Theſe two were the principal perſons of his council. They continued their journey until they arrived at Senlis, where the king was with his two uncles of Berry and Bourbon. He was received with joy, and then was aſked what was the news in Flanders, and how the ſiege of Oudenarde was going on. The duke of Burgundy made very prudent replies to theſe firſt queſtions of the king and his uncles; but when he found an opportunity, he drew his brother the duke of Berry aſide, and explained to him how the Ghent men, in the inſolence of their pride, were endeavouring to be maſters every where and to deſtroy all gentlemen; that they had already burnt and pillaged part of the kingdom of France, which was much to the prejudice and diſhonour of the realm, and ought not to be patiently borne.

'Fair

'Fair brother,' ſaid the duke of Berry, 'we will talk to the king on this ſubject: you and I are the principal of his council. The king being made a party, no one will attempt to thwart our inclinations in fomenting a war between France and Flanders, which have hitherto been at peace with each other: it will be proper we give ſome good reaſons for it, and that the barons of France be of our opinion; otherwiſe we may be blamed and the fault thrown on us; for the king is young, and every one knows that he will do whatever we ſhall tell him or adviſe him. If it turn out ſucceſsful, it will be paſſed over; but, ſhould it be otherwiſe, we ſhall be charged with it, and much more blamed, and with reaſon, than any of the other counſellors. Every one will ſay, 'See how badly the king's uncles, the dukes of Berry and Burgundy, have adviſed the king; they have engaged the nation in a war in which it had nothing to do,' I therefore ſay, my fair lord, that we muſt aſſemble the greater part of the prelates and nobles of the kingdom of France, and lay before them, in the preſence of the king, who is perſonally intereſted in this buſineſs, all the events which bear any relation to the inheritance of Flanders: we ſhall then ſoon ſee what is the general wish of France.'

The duke of Burgundy replied, 'You ſay well, my fair brother, and what you have adviſed ſhall be done.' At theſe words, the king entered the apartments where his uncles were, with a falcon on his wriſt: he was ſtruck with the duke's

laſt

laſt words; and ſaid with much good humour, 'What were you ſpeaking of, my fair uncles, at this moment with ſo much earneſtneſs? I should like to hear it, if it be proper for me to know.' 'Yes, my lord,' anſwered the duke of Berry; 'for what we were diſcuſſing perſonally concerns you. Your uncle, my brother of Burgundy, has juſt been complaining to me of the Flemings: thoſe villains of Flanders have driven the earl their lord out of his country, and all the gentlemen. They are now, to the amount of a hundred thouſand men, beſieging Oudenarde, under a captain called Philip von Artaveld, an Englishman for courage, who has ſworn he will never break up the ſiege until he has had his will on thoſe of the town, unleſs you shall force him to it. This reſervation he has made. Now, what do you ſay to this? will you aſſiſt your couſin of Flanders to regain his inheritance, of which peaſants, in their pride and cruelty have deprived him?'

'By my faith, my dear uncles,' replied the king, 'I have a very great inclination ſo to do, and in God's name let us march thither. I wish for nothing more than to try my ſtrength in arms, for never hitherto have I had armour on. It is neceſſary, therefore, if I wish to reign with honour and glory, that I learn the art of war.'

The two dukes, looking at each other, were much delighted with what the king had ſaid; and the duke of Berry added,—'My lord, you have very properly ſpoken, and you are bound

to

do what you ſay; for the country of Flanders is a dependance on the domain of France; and you have ſworn, and we alſo for you, that you will ſupport in their rights your vaſſals and liege men: the earl is alſo your couſin, you therefore owe him affection. Now, ſince you are in ſuch good inclinations, do not change them, but ſay the ſame to all who ſhall ſpeak to you on this ſubject; for we will aſſemble in haſte the prelates and barons of your realm, and in your preſence lay before them this buſineſs. Do you ſpeak your mind then, as clearly and as loudly as you have done to us, and they all will ſay we have an enterpriſing and well-intentioned king.'

'On my faith, my fair uncle, I wish every thing were ready for us to march thither tomorrow; for from henceforward the greateſt pleaſure I shall have will be to abaſe the pride of theſe Flemings.'

The two dukes were well pleaſed at hearing the king thus ſpeak out.

The duke of Bourbon now came, having been ſent for by them; and they related to him all you have heard, and how eager the king was to march to Flanders, with which he was much pleaſed.

Things remained in this ſtate. The king and his uncles wrote letters to all the lords of the council, ordering them to come to Compiegne on a certain day, when there would be a council held on the affairs of the realm. Every one obeyed, as

was

was right; but the king was so much rejoiced at what he had heard, and so much occupied was his mind with this subject, that nothing could put it out of his head. He frequently said, 'The council would be too tedious to accomplish the business well; adding, that when any one wishes to perform an enterprise successfully, deliberations should not be too long; for at last the enemy gains information of it.' He also said, when they laid before him the dangers that might happen, 'Yes, yes; nothing venture, nothing gain.' In this manner did the young king of France converse with the knights and squires of his chamber. I will now relate to you a dream which he had at this time at Senlis; and from which he took a flying hart for his emblem, as I was then informed.

CHAP. XXIV.

CHARLES THE SIXTH, KING OF FRANCE, FROM A DREAM, CHOOSES A FLYING HART FOR HIS DEVICE.

IT happened that during the residence of the young king Charles at Senlis, as he was sleeping in his bed, a vision appeared to him. He thought he was in the city of Arras, where, until then, he had never been, attended by all the flower of knighthood of his kingdom; that the earl of Flanders came there to him, and placed on his wrist a most beautiful and elegant pilgrim-falcon, saying, 'My lord, in God's name, I give this falcon to you, for the best that was ever seen, the most indefatigable

defatigable hunter, and the moſt excellent ſtriker of birds.' The king was much pleaſed with the preſent, and ſaid, 'Fair couſin, I give you my thanks.' He then thought he turned to the conſtable of France, who was near him, and ſaid, 'Sir Oliver, let you and I go to the plains, and try this elegant falcon which my couſin of Flanders has given me.' When the conſtable anſwered, 'Well, let us go.' Then each mounted their horſes, and went into the fields, taking the falcon with them, where they found plenty of herons to fly him at. The king ſaid, 'Conſtable, caſt off the falcon, and we ſhall ſee how he will hunt.' The conſtable let him fly, and the falcon mounted ſo high in the air, they could ſcarcely ſee him: he took the direction towards Flanders. 'Let us ride after my bird,' ſaid the king to the conſtable: 'for I will not loſe him.' The conſtable aſſented, and they rode on, as it appeared to the king, through a large marſh, when they came to a wood, on which the king cried out, 'Diſmount, diſmount: we cannot paſs this wood on horſeback.' They then diſmounted, when ſome ſervants came and took their horſes. The king and the conſtable entered the wood with much difficulty, and walked on until they came to an extenſive heath, where they ſaw the falcon chaſing herons, and ſtriking them down; but they reſiſted, and there was a battle between them. It ſeemed to the king that his falcon performed gallantly, and drove the birds before him ſo far, that he loſt ſight of him. This much vexed the king,

as well as the impoſſibility of following him; and he ſaid to the conſtable, 'I ſhall loſe my falcon, which I ſhall very much regret; for I have neither lure, nor any thing elſe to call him back.' Whilſt the king was in this anxiety, he thought a beautiful hart, with two wings, appeared to iſſue out of the wood, and come to this heath and bend himſelf down before the king, who ſaid to the conſtable, as he regarded this wonder with delight, 'Conſtable, do you remain here, and I will mount this hart that offers himſelf to me, and follow my bird.' The conſtable agreed to it, and the young king joyfully mounted the hart, and went ſeeking the falcon. The hart, like one well tutored to obey the king's pleaſure, carried him over the tops of the higheſt trees, when he ſaw his falcon ſtriking down ſuch numbers of birds, that he marvelled how he could do it. It ſeemed to the king that when the falcon had ſufficiently flown, and ſtruck down enough of the herons, he called him back, and inſtantly, as if well taught, he perched on the king's wriſt, when it ſeemed to him, that after he had taken the falcon by its lure, and given him his reward, the hart flew back again over the wood, and replaced the king on the ſame heath whence he had carried him, and where the conſtable was waiting, who was much rejoiced at his return. On his arrival he diſmounted: the hart returned to the wood, and was no more ſeen. The king then, as he imagined, related to the conſtable how well the hart had carried him: that he had never rode ſo eaſy

before

before in his life; and alſo the goodneſs of his falcon, who had ſtruck down ſuch numbers of birds: to all which the conſtable willingly liſtened. The ſervants then ſeemed to come after them with their horſes, which, having mounted, they followed a magnificent road that brought them back to Arras. The king at this part awakened, much astonished at the viſion he had ſeen, which was ſo imprinted on his memory, that he told it to ſome of his attendants who were waiting in his chamber. The figure of this hart was ſo agreeable to him, that he could not put it out of his imagination; and this was the cauſe why, on this expedition to Flanders againſt the Flemings, he took a flying hart for his device.

CHAP. XXV.

DURING THE SIEGE OF OUDENARDE, THE REBELS ENTREAT KING CHARLES TO MAKE PEACE BETWEEN THEM AND THE EARL OF FLANDERS.—THE KING ANSWERS THEM WITH CONTEMPT.—THEY THEN ENDEAVOUR TO DRAW THE ENGLISH INTO AN ALLIANCE WITH THEM.

PHILIP von Artaveld, although he had been very ſucceſsful at the battle of Bruges, and though fortune had ſmiled on him at his defeat of the earl and the citizens of Bruges, poſſeſſed not any abilities for war or ſieges. When young he had not been educated for it, but in ſiſting

with a rod in the rivers Scheld and Lis; and he clearly proved his incapacity during the ſiege of Oudenarde. He knew not how to take the town, and, through pride and preſumption, thought that it muſt be his, and that the inhabitants ought to come and ſurrender it to him. They had no ſuch inclination; but behaved themſelves like valorous men, ſkirmiſhing frequently with theſe Flemings at the barriers, in which they ſlew many and wounded more, and then retired without loſs into their town.

In theſe ſallies, Lambert de Lambres, Triſtan his brother, and the lord de Lunelhien, gained great renown.

The Flemings obſerving that the ditches of Oudenarde were wide and full of water, and that they could not approach the place but with great peril, reſolved in counſel to collect quantities of faggots and ſtraw to fill them up, to enable them to come near the walls and engage hand to hand. As it had been ordered, ſo it was executed; but the garriſon held what they were about cheap, and ſaid, that if there were no treaſon between them and the townſpeople, they were not alarmed for the event of the ſiege. However, ſir Daniel de Haluyn, the governor, to prevent any miſconduct, had kept the citizens ſo much under command that they had not any power whatever: and he had ſtrictly ordered, that none of the inhabitants ſhould dare to aſcend the walls, by day or night, without being accompanied by ſome of the men at arms, otherwiſe, if found, they would riſk the loſs of their lives.

In

In this manner was the ſiege continued. The Flemings had plenty of proviſion in their army, which was brought to them by ſea and land, as well as down the rivers, for they were lords of the whole of Flanders. They were alſo near the countries of Holland, Zealand, Brabant, and a part of Hainault, the inhabitants of which, through avarice of gain, privately brought their army proviſion in quantities.

This Philip von Artaveld had a courage more like Engliſh than French. He would have been glad if they had adhered more to the former, and made an alliance with England; for, ſhould the king of France, or duke of Burgundy, march an army againſt them to recover the country, they would have been aſſiſted. Philip had already in his army two hundred Engliſh archers, who had ſtolen away from their garriſon at Calais, and were paid every week.

Philip, to put a better colour on his actions, and to know what they ſaid of him in France, reſolved to ſend letters from himſelf and from the country of Flanders, to the king of France, humbly entreating the king to take the trouble of bringing about a ſound reconciliation between them and the earl their lord. He had no ſooner mentioned this idea than it was executed: he wrote amicable letters to the king of France and to his council, which he ordered a meſſenger to carry to France and deliver to the king. The meſſenger ſaid he would willingly obey, and rode on with the letters until he came to

Senlis,

Senlis, where the king was, to whom and to his uncles he gave the letters.

The king took them, and had them read in the preſence of his uncles and council. After they had been read and comprehended, the auditors burſt out into laughter. The meſſenger, becauſe he had come into the king's preſence without a paſſport, was ordered to be arreſted and put into priſon, where he remained for upwards of three weeks.

When Philip heard of this, he was very indignant, and, having ſummoned the captains of the army to him, he ſaid,—'You ſee what honour the king of France pays to us, after we have ſo amicably written to him, for which he detains our meſſenger. We certainly make too many difficulties in connecting ourſelves with the Engliſh, and, may ſuffer for it. The duke of Burgundy is now in France and governs the king juſt as he pleaſes, for he is but a child. Do you think that he will leave things in their preſent ſituation? Certainly not. Take for example our meſſenger, whom he has detained. It will therefore be prudent in us to ſend to England, as well for the general good of Flanders as to ſecure ourſelves and alarm our enemies. I am deſirous,' ſaid Philip, 'that we ſend thither ten or twelve of our principle men, that the knowledge of it may be carried to France, and that the king and his council may think we intend to unite ourſelves with his adverſary the king of England. But I do not

wiſh

wiſh ſuch alliances to be made in a hurry, nor at all if we were not thus circumſtanced; but I would that our ambaſſadors ſhould demand privately, of the king of England and his council, the ſum of two hundred thouſand old crowns, which we have a juſt right to, and which Jacob von Artaveld, my father, and the ſtates of Flanders, lent to the king of England when before Tournay, to pay his troops. Let them alſo tell the king of England, his uncles and his counſellors, that the ſtates of Flanders in general, and the chief towns who made this loan, demand the repayment of it; and that when this ſhall have been done, which the king of England is obliged to perform, he and his ſubjects ſhall have free entry into Flanders for the time to come. It is much better,' added Philip, 'that we make uſe of what is our own than that foreigners ſhould do ſo; and we never can have a better opportunity than now to get it back again, for the king and realm of England will not heſitate to gain the entry, love and alliance of ſuch a country as Flanders now is: beſides, the Engliſh have not in the whole coaſt from Bourdeaux to Sluys any port, except Calais, Cherbourg and Breſt, to gain entrance into France. Flanders, therefore, will open her ports to them very opportunely; for Brittany, excepting Breſt, is quite ſhut againſt them, and the duke of Brittany has ſwore to be a true Frenchman, which, if he were not, he would ſo become, through love to his couſin-german the earl of Flanders.'

All

All who heard him anſwered, that he had well and wiſely ſpoken, and what he had propoſed ſhould be followed; and that whoever was of the contrary opinion was not a wellwiſher to the proſperity of Flanders.

Philip did not delay executing it: he wrote on this ſubject to Peter du Bois and Peter le Nuitre, governors of Bruges, and alſo to thoſe of Ypres and Courtray, who agreed to his propoſal. One or two citizens were choſen from the principal towns, but from Ghent ſix. Among the firſt were Francis Atremen, Raſſe de la Verdelle, Louis de Vaux, ſir John Stotelare, Martin Blondel-Vatre, Jacob Bernare and a clerk who had been nominated biſhop of Ghent by pope Urban. Maſter John d'Albret, who had been dean of the church of our Lady at Tournay, had propoſed to make a biſhopnick of the town of Ghent, which ſhould enjoy the profits the biſhop of Tournay ought to have.

When the twelve citizens had received their full inſtructions as to what they were to ſay and do, they took leave of their friends, departed from the ſiege of Oudenarde, and continued their journey until they arrived at Calais. Sir John d'Albrenes*, the governor, received them very politely, when he underſtood they wanted to go to England, and provided them with ſhips and paſſage-boats. They remained there only three days, when they embarked, landed at Dover, and purſued their road to London.

* Sir John d'Albrenes. Q.

At

At the time this embaſſy from Flanders arrived at London, the king of England with his council, ſir John Montague, ſir John Burley and ſir William Beauchamp, were at Weſtminſter, occupied in the inveſting ſir Perducas d'Albreth with the whole barony of Chaumont in Gaſcony, which had reverted to the king, for him to do with it as he pleaſed; and I will tell you how this happened.

King Edward, in former times, had given it to ſir John Chandos, who had held it as long as he lived: after his death, he had given it to ſir Thomas Felton. Now ſir Thomas was lately dead, and the barony had reverted to the king of England. It was improper it ſhould long remain without a lord who would reſide on the ſpot; for it joined the lands of the lord d'Albreth, who at that period was a loyal Frenchman. The king's council conſidered that ſir Perducas d'Albreth, having faithfully ſerved the kings of England, Edward, Richard, and the prince, as well as the country of the Bourdelois for upwards of thirty years, was well deſerving to have this eſtate, which he would defend againſt any one.

Sir Perducas d'Albreth, on receiving the inveſtiture of the lands of Chaumont from the hands of the king, in the preſence of the nobles of England, thus addreſſed his majeſty: 'Sire, I take and receive this inheritance for myſelf and for my heirs, on condition that I and my heir faithfully ſerve you againſt all mankind, except againſt the houſe of Albreth; for againſt that

that whence I am ſprung, I will never make war as long as my inheritance is left in peace.'

The king and his council replied,—'In God's name be it ſo;' and on theſe terms he was inveſted.

I will now relate what befel this ſir Perducas d'Albreth. When he was returning to Gaſcony to take poſſeſſion of his eſtate, and the ſénéſchal of Bourdeaux had given him ſeiſin of the barony, the lord d'Albreth was much rejoiced: for he knew his couſin would not make war upon him, and that the lands of Albreth and of Chaumont would remain in quiet. The lord d'Albreth ſhewed much affection to his couſin, for he expected that after his deceaſe he would be put in poſſeſſion of ſuch of his caſtles as were in the barony of Chaumont. But Perducas had not any ſuch intentions. It chanced that he fell ſick; and, when he was lying on his death-bed and ſaw there were no hopes of recovery, he ſummoned all his vaſſals, and calling to him a young ſquire and good man at arms, named Perduch*, ſaid to him; 'I transfer to thee, in the preſence of my vaſſals, my whole eſtate of Chaumont. Be therefore a true Engliſhman, and loyal to the king of England. But I will not that againſt the houſe of Albreth, whence we are ſprung, thou ſhouldeſt ever make war, unleſs they commit outrages againſt thee.' The ſquire cheerfully anſwered, 'Sir, I willingly accept it on theſe terms.' Thus was Perduch d'Albreth lord of Chaumont in Gaſcony. Sir Perducas died ſoon after, which is all I know about it.

* Sala calls him 'Verduret de la Breth his nephew.'

CHAP.

CHAP. XXVI.

THE AMBASSADORS FROM GHENT FAIL IN FORMING AN ALLIANCE WITH ENGLAND.

WHEN theſe Ghent men were come to London, their arrival was ſoon known, and information of it carried to the king and his council, who ſent to them to know what they wanted. They came in a body to the palace of Weſtminſter, where they were met firſt by the duke of Lancaſter, the earl of Buckingham, the earl of Saliſbury and the greater part of the council; but the king was not preſent at this firſt interview. Theſe ambaſſadors having made their obeiſances to the Engliſh lords, the biſhop elect of Ghent ſpoke for them all, ſaying, 'My lords, we are come hither by orders from the town of Ghent, and from all Flanders, to requeſt counſel, comfort, and aſſiſtance from the king of England, on account of certain articles, and for reaſon of ancient alliances which ſubſiſted between England and Flanders. We wiſh to renew them, as the country of Flanders now ſtands in need of aſſiſtance, being at this moment without a lord. The principal towns and the country have choſen a regent, named Philip von Artaveld, who recommends himſelf particularly to the king, and to you all who are of his council. He entreats you to receive this commendation in good part; for if

the

the king ſhall wiſh to come into Flanders he will find all its ports open, and the country well diſpoſed towards him, where he may repoſe and refreſh himſelf and people as long a time as he ſhall pleaſe; and he may call upon Flanders for one hundred thouſand men, all armed. We are alſo ordered to requeſt from you the two hundred thouſand old crowns* which Jacob von Artaveld, and the chief towns of Flanders, formerly lent to king Edward, of good memory, at the ſieges of Tournay and of Calais, and which they now deſire may be paid back. It is the intention of the principal towns in Flanders, that before any thing further be done in a treaty of alliance, this ſum be paid down, by which means the king of England, and all his ſubjects, may ſay they are friends to the Flemings; and they ſhall have free entrance, at their pleaſure, into Flanders.'

When the lords had heard this ſpeech and demand, they looked at each other, and ſome began to ſmile. The duke of Lancaſter, addreſſing them, ſaid, 'My fair lords of Flanders, what you have ſaid requires counſel. Go and return to London, and the king will conſider your requeſts, and ſend you ſuch anſwers as you ſhall be contented with.' The Ghent men replied, 'God will it be ſo.' They then quitted the council chamber, leaving the lords of the council behind, who began to laugh among themſelves, and ſay, 'Did you notice theſe Flemings,

* Old crowns,—each worth ſeven ſhillings and twopence.—Cotgrave.

and

and hear the requeſt they made? They aſk aſſiſtance, ſaying, they are in very great want of it, and, beſides, demand our money. It is by no means reaſonable that we ſhould pay, and aſſiſt them into the bargain.' They looked on the Flemings as proud and preſumptuous, in thus demanding a debt of two hundred thouſand old crowns of ſo very ancient a date as forty years.

Nothing could have happened more opportunely for the king of France, who was eager to invade Flanders; for if the Flemings had been ſilent reſpecting theſe crowns, and had only requeſted aſſiſtance from the king of England, he would have gone in perſon to Flanders, or would have ſent thither ſuch a powerful force, that the Flemings who were in the field might have reſiſted the greateſt power on the earth. But it fell out otherwiſe, as you will hear related in this hiſtory.

CHAP XXVII.

THE MESSENGER WHICH THE GHENT MEN HAD SENT TO KING CHARLES OF FRANCE IS DELIVERED FROM PRISON.—SOME PRISONERS FROM TOURNAY AND COURTRAY ARE EXCHANGED FOR EACH OTHER.

INTELLIGENCE was carried to the king's council in France, that Philip von Artaveld, and the country of Flanders, had ſent ambaſſadors to England to form an alliance. And it

was

commonly reported that the king of England, with a large army, was about to come this ſeaſon to Flanders, and that he would fix its quarters at Ghent. This news was very probable, for it was to be ſuppoſed the Flemings would ſtrengthen themſelves by ſome means or other.

It was then thought proper to liberate the meſſenger of Philip. Indeed, to ſay the truth, they had not any right to impriſon him. He was therefore ſet at liberty, and ſent to Oudenarde where the army lay.

At this time the citizens of Bruges had ſeized and impriſoned ſome from Tournay. The Flemings ſhewed by this that they were indifferent as to war or peace with the French. Thoſe of Tournay, in return, captured ſome citizens of Courtray, whom they carried away priſoners to their town. Thus was the hatred increaſed between the men of Tournay and the Flemings.

The lords of Tournay, however, who wiſhed not to make war on the Flemings, their neighbours, on their own account, without receiving orders from the king of France, reſolved to ſend two of their citizens to Philip von Artaveld to make up matters between them, ſo that they might recover their townſmen who were priſoners, and render back, in exchange, thoſe whom they had taken. John Bon Enfant and John Picard were choſen to go on this buſineſs. They went to the ſiege before Oudenarde, and ſpoke with Philip, who, in honour of the city of Tournay, and not out of any reſpect to the king of France, as he told them, received them

very

very amicably: for the king had not uſed him nor the country of Flanders well, when he had impriſoned a meſſenger whom he had ſent to him on friendly terms.

'Sir,' replied the two citizens, 'you have received back your meſſenger.' 'That is true,' ſaid Philip; 'but it was more through fear than otherwiſe. Now tell me,' added Philip, 'what buſineſs has brought you hither?' 'Sir,' anſwered the citizens, 'it is to have back our townſmen who are impriſoned at Bruges.' 'Ha,' replied Philip, 'if they are detained, you have alſo impriſoned ſome from Courtray. You must not loſe any thing for this journey, ſo do you return our men, and you ſhall have yours.'

The men from Tournay anſwered, 'You ſay well, and we will cheerfully conſent to it.' The agreement was inſtantly made, and Philip von Artaveld wrote to Peter du Bois and to Peter le Nuitre, who reſided in Bruges, to deliver up the citizens of Tournay whom they had thrown into priſon; and that they would have in exchange thoſe who had been detained from Courtray; for he declared the city of Tournay had written to request it.

When they took their leave, Philip thus ſpoke to them,—'Gentlemen, mind my words: I do not wiſh to betray you; you are from the town of Tournay, which is a dependance on the king of France, with whom we will not enter into any treaty, until Dendremonde and Oudenarde ſhall be ſurrendered to us. Do not therefore come hither again, for thoſe who do will be detained

tained. Adviſe your countrymen and merchants not to paſs through Flanders; for we well know, that the king of France, your lord, will make war on us, for which we are prepared.

Theſe citizens of Tournay, after having heard this ſpeech, returned to Tournay to relate all that had paſſed. A proclamation was made, that no one ſhould have any intercourſe or dealings with the Flemings, without incurring the indignation of the king. The citizens of Tournay, who had been impriſoned at Bruges, returned; and thoſe from Courtray were ſent back. They dared not deal openly with the Flemings; but, when they wanted any merchandiſe from Flanders, they applied to Valenciennes; for thoſe of Brabant, Holland, Hainault, Zealand and Liege, might travel and carry on their commerce through all Flanders with perfect ſecurity.

The ſiege of Oudenarde still went on in the ſame manner. Philip and his Ghent men were encamped on the hill of Oudenarde, on the ſide of Hainault, where they had planted bombardes, cannons, and large machines, which made ſuch a noiſe when fired that they could be heard upwards of ſix leagues. Near them, but below, on the banks of the Scheld, were encamped thoſe from Bruges, as you aſcend the river by the gate of Bruges. Thoſe of Poperingue, Ypres, Caſſel and the Franconate, were quartered near them, ſo that they ſurrounded the town completely.

Oudenarde

Oudenarde being thus ſurrounded, the Flemings thought they ſhould ſtarve thoſe within it; but the garriſon made frequent ſallies, in which ſometimes they gained the advantage, and at others loſt it, as in ſuch caſes muſt happen. However, there were not any attempts made to ſtorm it. Philip would not raſhly riſk the lives of his men, and ſaid he would have it otherwiſe than by ſtorm; and that it could not hold out much longer, ſince there was not a poſſibility of its being reinforced. A bird could ſcarcely fly into Oudeharde without being ſeen by the beſieging army, ſo completely was it inveſted on all ſides.

CHAP. XXVIII.

KING CHARLES ORDERS COMMISSIONERS TO ENTER INTO CERTAIN TREATIES WITH THE FLEMINGS.—THEIR MESSENGERS ARE IMPRISONED AT THE MOMENT THEY DEMANDED PASSPORTS.

WE will now return to the king of France. His uncles and council thought it prudent to ſend to Tournay ſome knights and perlates of the realm to treat with the Flemings, and to learn more clearly their intentions. They therefore ordered ſir Milles de Dormans biſhop of Beauvis, the biſhop of Auxerre, the bishop of Laon, ſir Guy de Harcourt and ſir Triſtan du Bois, to Tournay as commiſſioners from the

king of France, where they found John Bou Enfant and John Picard, juſt returned from the ſiege of Oudenarde. They told theſe commiſſioners that Philip von Artaveld had declared to them, on taking leave, that the Flemings would never enter into any treaty until Oudenarde and Dendremonde were in their power.

'Well,' replied the commiſſioners, 'Philip, with all his pride and preſumption, of which he has enough, is not maſter of all the great towns in Flanders. We will therefore write to Ghent. Bruges, and Ypres, and ſend to each town letters by a meſſenger. We muſt enter on this buſineſs by ſome means or other.

The commiſſioners wrote letters to the three principal towns in Flanders, and directed them to Philip von Artaveld as the chief leader. Theſe letters contained as follows:

'To Philip von Artaveld and his companions, and to the good people of the three towns of Flanders and the Franconate of Bruges. May it pleaſe you to know, that the king of France has ſent us hither with the good intentions of eſtabliſhing a peace, as lord paramount, between the noble lord of Flanders, his couſin, and the commonalty of Flanders. Public report ſays, that you ſeek to form an alliance with the king of England and the English; which will be unreaſonable, and prejudicial to the kingdom of France, and which the king declares he will not ſuffer. We therefore entreat you, in the king's name, to ſend us paſſports, that we may endeavour to bring this peace to a good and ſolid concluſion, for which the king will

will thank you. You will write us word what are your intentions, and may the Lord keep you. Written at Tournay the ſixteenth day of the month of October' (1382.)

When theſe three letters, which contained the ſame words, were written and ſealed, they gave them to three men, to carry to Ghent, to Bruges and to Ypres, and to bring back the anſwers. They replied, they would bring back an anſwer, if they could get one, and then departed, each following the road to the town he was ſent to.

By accident, Philip happened to be at Ghent the day the meſſenger arrived with his letter; for otherwiſe thoſe of Ghent would not have opened it in his abſence. When he had read it, he did nothing but laugh, and ſet out ſoon after from Ghent, on his return to Oudenarde, carrying the letter with him; but the meſſenger remained in priſon at Ghent.

When arrived at Oudenarde, he called to him the lord de Harzelles and others of his companions: having read to them the letter from the commiſſioners, he ſaid,—'I think theſe French people wish to make a mockery of me and the country of Flanders. I told the citizens of Tournay, when they were here the day before yeſterday, that I would not liſten to any propoſals from France, nor enter into any treaty which they might offer, until Oudenarde and Dendremonde were ſurrendered to us.' At theſe words, news came from the governors of Bruges and Ypres, that they had alſo received letters,

and that the meſſengers who had brought theſe letters were detained and lodged in the town priſons. 'This is well done,' continued Philip. He then examined the letters for a while, and ſaid he would write himſelf to the French commiſſioners. He did ſo, in conſequence, and addreſſed them, 'To the very noble and diſcreet lords the commiſſioners from France.'

CHAP. XXIX.

THE ANSWER OF PHILIP VON ARTAVELD TO THE FRENCH COMMISSIONERS, WHICH HE SENT BY A PRISONER OF WAR FROM OUDENARDE.

'VERY dear and potent lords, may it pleaſe you, in your noble diſcretion, to know that we have received very amicably the letters ſent to us by the moſt excellent lord Charles king of France, informing us that your very noble lordſhips are come by his orders into theſe parts, to negotiate a peace between us and the moſt noble prince my lord of Flanders and the country of Flanders, and that the king aforeſaid and his council have authority to bring it to a concluſion, as the citizens of Tournay, o dear and good friends, teſtify to us by letters patent which we have ſeen. Now, ſince the king writes to us, that he is much diſpleaſed that theſe diſcords have ſo long continued and ſtill

ſtill exiſt, we are much ſurpriſed that he ſhould treat them ſo lightly, as in former times, when the town of Ghent had beſieged that of Oudenarde, we, by the unanimous conſent of the three great towns of Flanders, wrote to him, as to our ſovereign lord, to requeſt that he would make peace with us; but at that time he did not ſeem ſo willing to do what at this moment he is ſo deſirous of.

'We have alſo received letters patent to ſay, that twice you have written to us, and that you have come twice hither commiſſioned by the king aforeſaid, as is declared in theſe letters patent. But it ſeems to us, that in our anſwers, which we have ſent, we have clearly explained our intention reſpecting a treaty, which is, that we are reſolved no treaty ſhall be entered into by us and the country of Flanders, until thoſe towns and fortreſſes which are ſhut againſt the towns and country of Flanders, and particularly and expreſsly againſt the good town of Ghent, of which we are regent, ſhall be thrown open to the will of us the regent and the good town of Ghent; and, if this be not done as a preliminary, we ſhall not treat in the manner you requeſt. For it ſeems to us, that the king, according to you, means to aſſemble a large army to aſſiſt his couſin our lord. We know and feel that there are double dealings going forwards at this time, as was the caſe formerly. Our intention therefore is, to be on ſure ground and prepared for our defence; for, if it ſhould fall out as we expect, he will find

our

our army ready to defend us againſt our enemies; and we hope, through God's aſſiſtance, to be as fortunate as formerly in gaining a victory.

'With regard to what you ſay of public rumour, that we, or ſome of our countrymen, have ſought an alliance with the king of England, and that we are to be aided from thence; it is a truth that we are ſubjects of the crown of France, and that the king is our lord paramount, to whom we are bounden in allegiance. This we ever have performed. And even in theſe laſt days we ſent him our letters, as to our ſovereign lord, to entreat he would conclude a peace, to which he not only made no reply, but detained and impriſoned our meſſenger. This ſeems to us a blameable conduct in ſuch a lord, and ſtill greater in him, for we wrote to him as to our lord paramount, and he never condeſcended to ſend us any anſwer. Since therefore he has thus acted, we thought ourſelves juſtified in ſeeking advantage for the country of Flanders from whatever perſons we pleaſed, which has been the cauſe of the embaſſy to England, but nothing hitherto has been concluded. The king may not therefore be too late, provided all the ſtrong places ſhall be laid open to us. Notwithſtanding, we had forbidden thoſe of Tournay, the laſt time they came to our army, in future to dare to carry any letters or verbal meſſage, without proper paſſports; yet letters and meſſages have been carried to Bruges and Ghent; for which reaſon we have impriſoned the meſſengers, and we will teach them not to

carry

carry ſuch letters, that others may take warning from their example. We know well that you are ſeeking to ſow diſſenſions among us, and eſpecially againſt me, Philip von Artaveld, (whom God guard and preſerve) and that you wiſh to ſtir up treaſon where at this moment there is peace. We therefore warn you not to continue ſuch practices, until the before mentioned towns be opened unto us, which, with God's help, they ſhall ſhortly be, and to whoſe protection we commend you.

'Written before Oudenarde the 20th day of October, in the year 1382, Philip von Artaveld regent of Flanders.'

When Philip had written the above, in the preſence of his council, they thought it could not be amended, and ſealed it. They then conſidered to whom they ſhould give it to carry. Philip aſked, 'Have we no priſoners from Oudenarde?' 'Yes,' they replied, 'we have a varlet who was taken yeſterday in a ſkirmiſh, who is from Artois.' 'Send for him hither.' On his coming, Philip ſaid, 'Thou art my priſoner, and I may, if I chooſe, put thee inſtantly to death, but thou haſt had a narrow eſcape; for ſince thou art here thou ſhalt have thy liberty, on condition that thou pledge thy troth to carry theſe letters to Tournay, and deliver them into the hands of the king's counſellors whom thou wilt find there.'

The varlet was never ſo happy in his life as when he was promiſed his liberty, for he conſidered his death as certain, and replied, 'I ſwear, my

my lord, on my troth, that I will carry them whitherſoever you pleaſe, were it to hell.' Philip, burſting out into laughter, ſaid, 'Thou haſt well ſpoken.' He ordered two crowns to be given to him, and had him eſcorted out of the camp, and put in the road to Tournay.

When he arrived at Tournay they ſhewed him the hôtel of the biſhop of Laon, whither he went, and falling on his knees, punctually delivered his meſſage to the biſhop. They aſked him news of Oudenarde and of the beſieging army, when he told them all he knew. He was invited to dinner, and was, during dinner-time, cloſely queſtioned by the attendants of the biſhop. The biſhop of Laon went away, being unwilling to open the letters without his companions. When the three biſhops and the knights were aſſembled they opened the letters, read them attentively, and conſidered them maturely. They then delivered their ſentiments, ſaying; 'This Philip von Artaveld ſeemeth full of pride and preſumption, and little loves the royal majeſty of France.' Having conſulted together, they added; 'The provoſts, jurats and council of Tournay know that we have ſent to Philip and the towns of Flanders: it is juſt they ſhould learn the anſwer Philip has ſent us.'

They ſent for the provoſt, had the town-hall opened, and ſounded the bell which called the council together. When they were all aſſembled, they read to them the letters they had received. The wiſeſt were aſtonished at the preſumptuous expreſſions they contained. It was reſolved

reſolved that copies of theſe letters should remain at Tournay. The council then broke up, and every man returned to his home.

CHAP. XXX.

PHILIP VON ARTAVELD WRITES AFFECTEDLY CIVIL LETTERS TO TOURNAY.—THE FRENCH COMMISSIONERS RETURN TO THE KING.

PHILIP continued with the army before Oudenarde, as you have before heard. He did not repent having ſent ſuch harsh and pointed anſwers to the commiſſioners of the king of France, but was ſorry he had not written cajoling letters of civility to the provoſt and jurats of Tournay, pretending to shew them honour, though he had very little reſpect for them; for he was not willing to increaſe the hatred and ill will they bore him.

Philip therefore wrote in manner and form following: the ſuperſcription was, 'To our honourable, wiſe and good friends, the provosts and jurats of the good town of Tournay.

'Very dear and good friends, may it pleaſe you to know that we have received your letters, wherein mention is made of the two citizens of your town, ill intentioned carriers of letters to Ghent and Bruges, from the commiſſioners of the king of France, who have been arrested and detained by us, and whom you entreat to be

be ſet at liberty; by which means the love and affection (which, through God's grace, ſubſiſts between us) may be continued uninterrupted between you and the country of Flanders. This love, very dear friends, does not appear to us to be very great: for we have received information that the king of France, the dukes of Burgundy and Brittany are aſſembling their forces to come to the aſſiſtance of my lord, the earl, againſt the country of Flanders, to regain that country, and to fight with us, notwithſtanding the letters which they have ſent us to treat of peace and concord, which to us does not ſeem to be a conduct becoming ſuch perſons; and for which reaſon we are upon our guard, and ſhall continue ſo henceforth day and night. With reſpect to the priſoners, your townſmen, we ſhall detain them until we know for a certainty the truth of this aſſembling of forces, and until it ſhall pleaſe us to ſet them at liberty. You know, that when your citizens were lately in Flanders ſeeking peace, it was then ordered that no perſon whatever ſhould bring meſſages or letters without a proper paſſport. This however is what the lords commiſſioners, being with you, have done, in order to excite diſcord and diſſenſions in the country. We therefore entreat of you, dear friends, that you will not in future ſend any of your citizens or townsmen to Flanders by order of theſe commiſſioners. But if there ſhould be any thing that we can do, affecting your town or its citizens, we will attend to it in the ſame manner as we ſhould

ſhould wiſh our affairs might be attended to by you, in whom we have the greateſt confidence, ſuch as good neighbours ought to have for one another. 'And it is the general intention of all Flanders, that merchants and merchandiſe paſs ſafely from country to country, without ſuffering the ſmalleſt injury. May God take you into his holy keeping!

'Written at our army the 22d day of October, in the year 1382, Philip von Artaveld regent of Flanders.'

Three days after the firſt letter had been ſent to the commiſſioners from France, and while theſe lords were aſſembled in council in the hall, this ſecond letter was brought by a varlet from Douay, who ſaid, that thoſe who were before Oudenarde had ſent it to them. It was carried to the hall where the commiſſioners were, and read and conſidered at leiſure. At length the commiſſioners replied to thoſe of Tournay, who requeſted their advice on the occaſion; 'Gentlemen, we would adviſe you not to have any acquaintance or dealings with the Flemings, for you will not be thanked for it in France. Neither receive nor open any letters which may come from them; for, if it ſhould be known in the king's council that you do ſo, you will be blamed, and ſuffer for it. Affairs will not long remain in the ſtate they are now in.' Thoſe of Tournay anſwered, 'They would follow this advice, and, if it pleaſed God, they would never do any thing to deſerve a reprimand.'

The French commiſſioners ſtaid but three days

days longer at Tournay, when they ſet out on their return to the king, whom they found at Peronne, and his three uncles, the dukes of Berry, Burgundy and Bourbon with him.

CHAP. XXXI.

KING CHARLES, AFTER HEARING THE REPORT OF HIS COMMISSIONERS, AT THE INSTIGATION OF THE EARL OF FLANDERS WHO WAS PRESENT, ASSEMBLES HIS ARMY IN ARTOIS, AGAINST THE FLEMINGS.—PHILIP VON ARTAVELD GUARDS THE PASSES INTO FLANDERS.

THE day before the return of the commiſſioner, the earl of Flanders arrived at Peronne, to lay his affairs before the king and council, and to do homage for the county of Artois, which he was bounden to do and had not performed ſince the deceaſe of his mother, who had died this year. On the arrival of the commiſſioners, the council was aſſembled in the preſence of the young king, when the letters before mentioned were read; that of Philip to them, and the one he had ſent to Tournay. They conſidered them in an unfavourable light, and declared that ſuch pride and preſumption in Flanders ought not to be ſuffered.

The earl of Flanders was not, as may be ſuppoſed, diſpleaſed on hearing this: he therefore laid his grievances before the king and council very opportunely, when they were heard and attended

attended to with pleaſure. The king was adviſed to make the following anſwer: 'Earl of Flanders, you will return to Artois; and in a ſhort time we will ourſelf be at Arras, where you will perform your duty in the preſence of the peers of France. I cannot better ſhew you that I make the quarrel my own, than by my intention to march againſt our enemies.'

The earl was ſatisfied with this anſwer. Three days afterwards, he left Peronne, and, returning towards Artois, came to Hêdin. But the king of France, like one who was deſirous of marching to Flanders to abaſe the pride of the Flemings, as his predeceſſors had formerly done, ſet his ſecretaries at work, and ſent his letters and ſummons by meſſengers to all parts of his kingdom, ordering every one to haſten to Arras without delay, accoutred each, according to his rank, in the beſt manner he was able; for, if it were God's pleaſure, he was determined to fight the Flemings in their own country.

No lord of his realm diſobeyed, but all ſent orders to their vaſſals, and marched from the moſt diſtant countries, ſuch as Auvergne, Rouergue, Toulouſain, Gaſcony, Poitou, Limouſin, Saintonge and Brittany: others came from the Bourbonois, Forêts, Burgundy, Dauphiné, Savoy, Bar and Lorraine, and from all parts of France and its dependencies, to Arras.

The aſſemblage of ſuch numbers of men at arms was a wonderful beautiful ſight. The earl of Flanders reſided at Hêden, and heard daily from the king of France and the duke of Burgundy

of

of the great levies which were making, and in conſequence iſſued a proclamation throughout Artois, forbidding any one, under pain of loſing his life and fortune, to withdraw any thing whatever from houſe, fortreſs or town; for he was deſirous that the men at arms who were marching to Artois ſhould have the advantage of being ſerved with whatever was in the low countries.

The king of France came into Artois, where he remained. Men at arms came to him from all quarters, and ſo handſomely equipped it was a fine ſight to ſee: they quartered themſelves as they arrived in the plains, and found all the barns quite full and well furniſhed.

The earl of Flanders came to Arras, which greatly pleaſed the king and his lords: he performed his homage in the preſence of thoſe peers who were there, for the county of Artois, and the king accepted him as his vaſſal. His majeſty then addreſſed him, ſaying,—'Fair couſin, if it pleaſe God and St. Denis, we will reſtore you to your inheritance of Flanders, and will abate the pride of Philip von Artaveld and the Flemings ſo effectually that they ſhall never again have it in their power to rebel.'

'My lord,' replied the earl, 'I have full confidence in it; and you will acquire ſuch honour and glory that as long as the world laſts you will be praiſed, for certainly the pride of the Flemings is very great.'

Philip, whilſt at the ſiege of Oudenarde, was informed of every thing, and that the king of France

France was marching a large army againſt him, though he pretended not to believe it, and ſaid to his people,—'By what means does this young king think to enter Flanders? He is as yet too young by a year to imagine he can frighten us by his aſſembling an army. I will have the entrances ſo well guarded that it ſhall not be in their power for this year to croſs the river Lis.'

He ſent to Ghent for the lord de Harzelles. On his arrival, he ſaid to him,—'Lord de Harzelles, you hear how the king of France is making preparations to deſtroy us. We muſt have a council on this ſubject. You ſhall remain here, and I will go to Bruges to learn ſurer intelligence, and to encourage the citizens of the principal towns. I will alſo eſtabliſh ſuch garriſons on the river Lis, and at the chief paſſes, that the French ſhall not be able to advance through them.'

The lord de Harzelles having aſſented to this, Philip left the ſiege, and took the road towards Bruges. He travelled like a lord, having his diſplayed pennon borne before him, blazened with his arms: which were three hats argent on a field ſable. On his arrival at Bruges, he found Peter du Bois and Peter le Nuitre, the governors of Bruges; and having informed them, that the king of France was marching toward Flanders with a large army, and that it was neceſſary to provide a remedy by guarding the paſſes, he added,—'You, Peter du Bois, muſt go to the paſs of Commines, to guard the river; and you, Peter le Nuitre, will defend the bridge of Warneton:

neton: you will break down all the bridges on the river as far as la Gerge, Haſelles, Meureville and Courtray, by which means the French will not be able to paſs. I will myſelf go to Ypres, to encourage them, and to remonſtrate with them, that as we are all united in one common cauſe, none ſhould fail or heſitate to perform what we have ſworn to do. It is not in the power of the king of France, nor theſe Frenchmen, to croſs the river Lis and enter Flanders provided the paſſes be well guarded, for they muſt follow the courſe of the river to ſeek for a paſſage.'

The two Peters replied, 'Philip, you ſpeak well, and we will obey what you have ordered. But have you had any news from our people in England?' 'No, by my troth,' ſaid Philip, 'which I much wonder at. The parliament is ſitting at London, and very ſhortly we muſt receive intelligence from them. The king of France cannot make ſuch haſte, but we ſhall have received ſuccours from England, before they can do us much harm. I hope the king of England has iſſued his ſummons, and that the Engliſh will arrive here ſome night before we are aware.'

Thus did theſe companions diſcourſe together, who held all Flanders under their obedience, except Dendremonde and Oudenarde.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXII.

SEVERAL KNIGHTS OF THE PARTY OF THE EARL OF FLANDERS, HAVING PASSED PONT-AMENIN, ARE DEFEATED AND KILLED ON THEIR ATTEMPT TO REPASS IT, THE FLEMINGS HAVING BROKEN DOWN THE BRIDGE.—PHILIP, HEARING THIS NEWS WHEN AT YPRES, MAKES USE OF IT TO ENCOURAGE THE INHABITANTS.

WHILST theſe preparations were going forward, and during the reſidence of the king of France at Arras, great bodies of men at arms were aſſembling in the Tourneſis, Artois, and caſtlewick of Lille and its neighbourhood. Some knights and ſquires, who reſided at Lille and thereabout, reſolved to perform feats of arms that ſhould gain them renown, chiefly through the exhortations of the Haſe de Flandres.

They collected about ſix ſcore knights and ſquires, and croſſed the river Lis at Pont-Amenin, which was not then broken down, two leagues from Lille. They rode for the town of Harle, which they ſurpriſed; and, after ſlaying many in the town and environs, they drove the remainder out of the town. Their cries were heard in the neighbouring villages; the inhabitants of which ſounded their alarm bells, and marched towards Harle and Pont-Amenin, whence the cries ſeemed to come.

When the Haſe, ſir John Jumont, the conſtable de Vuillon, ſir Henry Duffle, and the other knights and ſquires, had ſufficiently alarmed the country, they thought it was time for them to retreat, and ſet out on their return, intending to repaſs the bridge, but they found it ſtrongly occupied by Flemings, who were buſily employed in deſtroying it; and, when they had broken down any parts, they covered them with ſtraw, that the miſchief might not be perceived.

The knights and ſquires at this moment arrived, mounted on the beſt of horſes, and found upwards of two thouſand peaſants drawn up in a body without the town, prepared to advance upon them. The gentlemen, on ſeeing this, formed, and having fixed their lances on their reſts, thoſe beſt mounted inſtantly charged this body of peaſants, with loud ſhouts. The Flemings opened their ranks through fear, but others ſay through malice; for they well knew the bridge would not bear them; and they ſaid among themſelves, 'Let us make way for them, and we ſhall ſoon ſee fine ſport.'

The Haſe de Flandres, and his companions, deſirous to get away, for any further ſtay would be againſt them, galloped for the bridge, which was now too weak to bear any great weight: however the Haſe, and ſome others, had the courage and good luck to paſs over: they might be about thirty: but, as others were following, the bridge broke down under them. Horſes and riders were overthrown, and both periſhed together.

Thoſe

Thoſe behind, ſeeing this misfortune, were thunderſtruck, and knew not whither to fly to ſave themſelves. Some leaped into the river, intending to ſwim, but they were not able thus to eſcape. The river was deep, and the banks ſo high and ſteep that the horſes could not land. Great ſlaughter enſued; for the Flemings fell upon them and killed them eaſily, and without pity. They made ſeveral leap into the water, and they were drowned.

Sir John de Jumont narrowly eſcaped, for the bridge broke under him, but, by great agility of body, he ſaved himſelf: he was, however, badly wounded on the head and body by arrows, and it was ſix weeks before he recovered. At this unfortunate action were killed, the conſtables de Vuillon, de Bouchars, de St. Hilaire, and more drowned: ſir Henry Duffle was ſlain. Including drowned and killed, there were upwards of ſixty; and very fortunate were thoſe who eſcaped. Great numbers returned wounded from this enterprife.

News was carried to the lords of France at Arras, of their countrymen having loſt the day; and that the Haſe de Flandres had conducted this fooliſh expedition. He was pitied by ſome, but by others not. Thoſe who had been moſt accuſtomed to arms ſaid, they had acted ill, to croſs a river that was not fordable, attack a large town and enter an enemy's country, and return the way they had come, without having eſtabliſhed guards on the bridge.

It was not an enterprise planned by prudent men at arms, who were desirous of success; but, since they planned their enterprise with so much self-sufficiency, they had suffered from the consequence.

This affair passed off, and was soon forgotten. Philip departed from Bruges and came to Ypres, where he was most joyfully received. Peter du Bois went to Commines, where all the inhabitants of the flat country were assembled, and instantly began his preparations for defence, loosening the planks of the bridge, so that, if there should be occasion, it could immediately be pulled down: but he was unwilling totally to destroy the bridge, lest the inhabitants of the adjacent flat country might suffer, who daily crossed it with their cattle in droves, to place them in greater security on that side of the Lis. The whole country was so much covered with them it was marvellous to see.

The day Philip von Artaveld came to Ypres, news arrived of the defeat of the French at Pont-Amenin, and that the Hase had been nearly taken. Philip was mightily rejoiced at this, and said with a smile, to encourage those near,—'By the grace of God, and the just cause we are engaged in, it will all end so; and never shall this king, if he should be so foolishly advised to cross the Lis, return again to France.'

Philip was five days in Ypres, and harangued the people in the open market-place, to encourage them and to keep them steady to their engagements,

engagements, telling them that the king of France was coming to deſtroy them without the leaſt ſhadow of right. 'Good people,' ſaid Philip, 'do not be alarmed if he ſhould march againſt us; for he will never be able to croſs the river Lis, as I have had all the paſſes well guarded, and have ordered Peter du Bois to Commines with a large body of men: he is a loyal man, and one who loves the honour of Flanders; and Peter le Nuitre I have ſent to Warneton; all the other bridges on the Lis are broken down, and there is neither paſs nor ford which they can croſs but at theſe two towns. I have alſo heard from our friends whom we ſent to England. In a ſhort time we ſhall receive conſiderable ſuccours from thence, as we have made a ſtrong alliance with them. Keep up, therefore, valiantly your hopes, for our honour ſhall be unſullied; and obſerve punctually what you have promiſed and ſworn to us in the good town of Ghent, which has had ſuch trouble and difficulty to maintain the rights and franchiſes of Flanders. Now, let all thoſe who are determined to remain ſteady to the cauſe, according to the oath they took, gallantly lift up their hands to heaven as a token of loyalty.'

At theſe words all who were in the market-place, and who had heard the ſpeech, held up their hands as a ſign of their loyalty. After this Philip deſcended from the ſcaffold on which he had harangued, and returned to his houſe, where he remained the whole day. On the morrow he and his attendants mounted their horſes

horſes and went towards Oudenarde, where the ſiege was ſtill going on, notwithſtanding the news of the French; but on paſſing through Courtray he reſted two days.

CHAP. XXXIII.

THE ORDER OF THE FRENCH ARMY IN ITS MARCH TO FLANDERS, AFTER THEY HAD HEARD THE BRIDGES WERE BROKEN AND GUARDED.

WE will for a while leave Philip von Artaveld, and ſpeak of the young king of France who reſided at Arras, and who, as he ſhewed, had a great deſire to enter Flanders, to lower the pride of the Flemings; and was daily increaſing his army, by the arrival of men at arms from all quarters. After the king had tarried eight days at Arras, he went to Lens, in Artois*, where he ſtaid two days. On the third day of November he departed and came to Seclin†, where he halted. A council was held, in the preſence of the conſtable of France, the marſhals of France, Burgundy and Flanders, to conſider how they ſhould proceed; for the common report in the army was the impoſſibility to enter Flanders in caſe the paſſes of the river ſhould be ſtrongly guarded. It rained, be-

* Lens, a town in Artois on the Souchets, four leagues from Bethune.

† Seclin, an ancient town in Flanders, near Lille.

ſides

ſides, at this time continually, and was ſo exceedingly cold that they could not advance. Some of the wiſeſt ſaid it was wrong to undertake ſuch an expedition at this ſeaſon of the year, and to bring the king ſo far into ſuch a country. They ought not to have united before the ſummer to carry the war into Flanders, for the king had never been ſo far in his life.

This river Lis is ſo difficult to croſs, that, except at certain places, it cannot be paſſed. There are no fords, and the country it runs through is ſo very marſhy, horſes cannot approach it. The conſtable, on hearing this, aſked, 'Where does it riſe?' He was anſwered, that it came from near Aire and St. Omer, 'Since it has a ſpring,' replied the conſtable, 'we will eaſily paſs it. Order our men to march towards St. Omer, where we can croſs this river at our eaſe, and enter Flanders. Theſe Flemings are ſo proud and ſelf-ſufficient they will march to attack us, either before Ypres or at ſome other place.'

The marſhals agreed to the propoſition of the conſtable, and every thing remained in this ſtate the whole day and night, when, on the morrow, the lord d'Albreth, the lord de Coucy, ſir Aimemon de Pommiers, ſir John de Vienne admiral of France, ſir William de Poitiers, the baſtard de Langres, the bègue de Villaines, ſir Raoul de Coucy, the count de Converſant, the viſcount d'Acy, ſir Raoul de Raineval, the lord de St. Juſt, ſir Arthur de Hedin, ſir Anthony d'Archies, the lord de Saimpi, ſir William des Bourdes.

Bourdes, the lord de Longueville, the lord de Sulli, ſir Triſtan de l'Eſtouet, ſir Oliver du Gueſclin, ſir Maurice du Treſiquidy, ſir Guy le Baveux, ſir Lucas de l'Eſtrughen, ſir Nicholas Pamel, the two marſhals of France, ſir Louis de Sancerre, and ſir Louis de Blainville, the marſhals of Burgundy and Flanders, ſir Enguerrant de Haluyn, entered the chamber of the conſtable, to receive orders, how, and in what direction, they were to advance: whether they ſhould march through Lille to Commines and Warneton, where the paſſes were guarded, or make for the upper countries of Venoye and St. Venant*, and there croſs the Lis. There were many debates among theſe lords on this ſubject: and thoſe who knew the country ſaid; 'Certainly, at ſuch a ſeaſon as this, it will not be right to advance into that country, neither can we go into the territories of Caſſel, Surnes, or Verthes.' 'And what road ſhall we then take?' cried the conſtable. Upon which, the lord de Coucy ſaid, 'I would propoſe that we march to Tournay and there croſs the Scheld, and take the road towards Oudenarde. This road is very eaſy, and we ſhall engage with our enemies. After paſſing the Scheld we ſhall not have any thing to ſtop us before Tournay. We may thus arrive before Oudenarde, and puniſh Philip von Artaveld. We can have daily refreſhments of proviſion come to us from Hainault, and follow us down the river from Tour-

* A town in Artois on the Lis, four leagues from Bethune.

nay,

nay.' This ſpeech of the lord de Coucy was well attended to, and ſupported by ſeveral for ſome time: but the conſtable and marſhals were more inclined to follow the courſe of the Lis, to ſeek a ſhorter paſſage, than to march to the right or left, by a longer road; and they urged ſtrong reaſons for it, ſaying, 'If we look for any other road but the ſtraight one, we do not ſhew ourſelves good men at arms, at leaſt it is our duty to examine if we cannot croſs the river above or below this paſs at Commines, which is guarded. Beſides, if we retreat, our enemies will rejoice and be encouraged: their forces will encreaſe, and they will ſay that we fly from them. There is alſo another point which ought to be conſidered: we are ignorant what has been the ſucceſs of the ambaſſadors they ſent to England; for, if, by any treaty aſſiſtance ſhould come to them from that quarter, they will give us much trouble. It is therefore better that we get rid of this buſineſs in Flanders as ſpeedily as poſſible, than be thus long in determining upon it. Let us inſtantly, and with courage, march towards Commines, and God will aſſiſt us. We have ſo often croſſed and recroſſed larger rivers than this Lis, that it cannot long prevent us from paſſing it. Happen what may, when we are on its banks we can then form our opinions; and when thoſe of our company in the van-guard (who have for theſe twenty or thirty years ſeen many more dangerous paſſes than this) have croſſed this river, and gained the other ſide, our enemies will be a hundred times more frightened than

if

if we had marched at our eaſe, ſeeking a paſſage on the right or left, out of our direct road: we may then conſider ourſelves as lords of Flanders.'

This plan was unanimouſly adopted. During the time theſe lords were aſſembled, they conſidered how they ſhould form their battalions; and ſelected thoſe who were to march on foot with the conſtable in the van-guard, in order to clear the roads for the army to paſs and march in a line, and to act as ſcouts to obſerve and find out their enemies. They alſo choſe thoſe who were to be in the king's battalion, regulated the arms with which they ſhould ſerve, and appointed proper perſons to carry the oriflamme of France and to guard it; and likewiſe determined of what numbers the wings were to be compoſed, and how many were to be in the rear-guard. All theſe things they debated and arranged.

When theſe points had been ſettled, and they could not think of any thing more that was neceſſary to be done, the council broke up, and every one retired to his lodgings. Thoſe lords and barons who had not been preſent were informed of the regulations, and the manner in which they were to act from henceforward.

It was this day ordered that the king ſhould on the morrow diſlodge from Seclin, march through Lille without halting, and take up his quarters at Margnetté l'Abbaye; and that the van-guard ſhould paſs on to Commines and Warneton, and do the moſt they could in the courſe of the day.

This

This being ſettled, the maſter of the croſs-bows, in conjunction with the conſtable and marſhals, unanimouſly appointed ſir Joſſe de Haluyn and the lord de Rambures to the command of the infantry, who were to clear the roads by cutting down hedges and forests, filling up vallies and every thing elſe that might be neceſſary: their numbers amounted to ſeventeen hundred and ſixty.

In the van-guard were the marſhals of Flanders, France and Burgundy, who had under their command ſeventeen hundred men at arms and ſeven hundred croſs-bows, beſides four thouſand infantry whom the earl had given to them, armed with large ſhields and other weapons. It was alſo ordered that the earl of Flanders, and his battalion, conſiſting of about ſixteen hundred men at arms, knights, ſquires and infantry, ſhould march on the wings of the van-guard to reinforce it, ſhould it be neceſſary. It was likewiſe ordered that the king's battalion ſhould march between the van-guard and the battalion of the earl of Flanders, and that the king's three uncles, Berry, Burgundy and Bourbon ſhould be in it, and alſo the count de la Marche, ſir James de Bourbon, his brothers, the count de Clermont, the dauphin d'Auvergne, the count de Dampmartin, the count de Sancerre, ſir John de Boulogne, to the amount of ſix thouſand men at arms, two thouſand Genoeſe croſs-bows and others.

The rear-guard was to conſiſt of two thouſand men at arms and two hundred archers; the com-

commanders of which were the lord John d'Artois count d'Eu, the lord Guy count de Blois, ſir Waleran count de St. Pol, ſir William count de Harcourt, the lord de Châtilloh and the lord de Sere.

Sir Peter de Villiers was appointed to bear the oriflamme, attended by four knights, whoſe names were ſir Robert le Baveux, ſir Morice de Sancourt, ſir Guy de Treſiquidi and Brandon de la Heuſe: le borgne de Ruet and le borgne de Montdoulcet were named to guard the banner.

It is proper to be known, that the lords who had planned this expedition had determined they would never return to France until they had engaged Philip von Artaveld and his forces, and it was for this reaſon they had drawn up their battalions as ready for the combat on the morrow.

The lords d'Albreth, de Coucy, and ſir Hugh de Hanlon were ordered to form the battalions and place them in array. Sir William de Bannes and the lord de Champreny were appointed marſhals to attend to the quarters of the king and his battalion.

It was alſo ordered, that on the day of battle, no one but the king and eight valiant men appointed to attend his perſon ſhould be on horſeback. The names of theſe eight men were as follows: the lord de Raineval, le bègue de Villaines, ſir Aymemon de Pommiers, ſir Enguerrant de Haluyn, the viſcount d'Acy, ſir Guy le Baveux, ſir Nicholas de Pennel and ſir William des Bourdes. The lord de Raineval and ſir Enguerrant de Haluyn were to take poſt in front of the king: le bègue de Villaines and the viſcount

d'Acy

d'Acy (who is called in ſeveral places hereafter the viſcount d'Aunoy) were to place themſelves on each ſide; and ſir Aymemon de Pommiers, ſir Nicholas de Pennel, ſir Guy le Baveux and ſir William des Bourdes were to take poſt in the rear.

It was likewiſe ordered, that on the day of battle, ſir Oliver de Cliſſon, conſtable of France, and ſir William de Poitiers, baſtard de Langres, ſhould advance on horſeback, to reconnoitre and obſerve the appearance of the enemy.

CHAP. XXXIV.

SOME FEW OF THE FRENCH, NOT BEING ABLE TO CROSS THE LIS AT THE BRIDGE OF COMMINES, FIND MEANS OF DOING SO, BY BOATS AND OTHER CRAFT, UNKNOWN TO THE FLEMINGS.

THE orders above-mentioned were punctually obeyed; and the van-guard diſlodged on the morrow, marching in order of battle towards Commines. They found the roads well made, for the lord de Franſures * and ſir Joſſe de Haluyn had paid great attention to them: this was on the Monday.

When the conſtable and marſhals of France, with the van-guard, arrived at the bridge of Commines, they were forced to halt; for it was ſo completely deſtroyed that it was not in the power of man to repair it, if any oppoſition

* Franſures. He before calls him Rambures.

ſhould

ſhould be made when they were attempting it, as the Flemings were in great force on the oppoſite ſide of the river, and ready to defend the paſs againſt all who might wiſh to attack them: they were upwards of nine thouſand, under the command of Peter du Bois and others, who ſhewed good inclinations to repulſe any attempt.

Peter du Bois had placed himſelf on the cauſeway, at the end of the bridge, with a battle-axe in his hand; and the Flemings were drawn up on each ſide.

The conſtable of France and the lords with him, having conſidered the ſituation, thought it impoſſible to paſs the river at that place unleſs the bridge were rebuilt; they ordered their ſervants to follow the courſe of the river, and examine its banks for about a league up and down. When they returned, they informed their maſters, who were waiting for them, that they had not been able to find any place where the cavalry could paſs

Upon hearing this, the conſtable was much vexed and ſaid,—'We have been badly adviſed to take this road: better would it have been for us to have gone to St. Omer than remain in this danger, or to have croſſed the Scheld at Tournay, as the lord de Coucy adviſed, and to have marched ſtraight to Oudenarde and fought our enemies, ſince it is both our duty and inclination to combat them; and they are ſo preſumptuous they would have waited for us at their ſiege.'—The lord Louis de Sancerre then ſaid, —'I am of opinion that we fix our quarters here

here for this day, and lodge our army, ſhould it arrive, as well as we are able; and that we ſend to Lille to ſeek for boats and hurdles, that may come down the river, with which to-morrow we can throw a bridge from theſe fine meads and croſs over; for we have no other alternative.'

Upon this, ſir Joſſe de Haluyn ſaid,—'My lord, we have been informed that there will be great difficulties between this and Lille; for the river Menyn, on which all boats muſt paſs to come hither, has been obſtructed by large beams thrown acroſs it by the Flemings who are in thoſe parts: they have beſides totally deſtroyed the bridge, and we learn it is impoſſible for any veſſels or boats to paſs.'

'I know not then,' added the conſtable, 'what we can now do. It will be better for us to take the road to Aire, and croſs the Lis at that place, ſince we are unable to do ſo here.'

During the time the conſtable and marſhals of France and Burgundy were in this dilemma at the bridge of Commines, ſeveral knights and ſquires ſilently withdrew, with the intent to hazard ſome gallant deeds of arms and attempt to croſs the river, whatever it might coſt them. They meant likewiſe to combat the Flemings in their entrenchments and open a paſſage, as I ſhall now relate.

While the van-guard was on its march from Lille to Commines, the lord de St. Py, and ſome other knights from Hainault, Flanders, Artois, and even France, had held a council without

without the knowledge of the conſtable or marſhals. They ſaid; 'We will procure two or three boats, which we will launch into the river Lis, at a ſheltered place below Commines, and will fix poſts on each ſide of the river where it is not wide, to faſten cords to. We ſhall by this means ſoon convey over a large body of men, and by marching on the rear of our enemies we may attack them, and, if victorious, we ſhall gain the reputation of valiant men at arms.' After they had thus determined in council, the lord de St. Py exerted himſelf ſo much that he procured from Lille a boat and cords, with every other neceſſary article. On the other hand, ſir Herbeaux de Belleperche and ſir John de Roye, who were companions in this expedition, had alſo cauſed a boat to be brought. Sir Henry de Manny, ſir John de Malatrait and ſir John Chauderon, Bretons, who had been of this council, had likewiſe provided one, and followed the preceding companies.

The lord de St. Py was the firſt who arrived at the river with his boat, cords and faſtenings. They fixed a ſtrong ſtake to which they tied the cord: three varlets then croſſed over, and the boat, with the cords, being launched, they fixed on the oppoſite ſide another strong post, to which they faſtened the other end of the cord: and, this being done, they returned with the boat to their master.

It happened that the conſtable and marſhals of France were at that time at the bridge of Commines, pondering how they could diſcover a paſſage,

ſage. They were then informed of the intentions of the lord de St. Py and the other knights. Upon which the conſtable, addreſſing himſelf to the lord Louis de Sancerre, ſaid; 'Marſhal, go and ſee what they are doing, and if it be poſſible to croſs the river in the manner they propoſe, add ſome of our men to theirs.'

Juſt as theſe knights were preparing to embark, the marſhal of France came thither, attended by a large company of knights and ſquires. They made way for him, as was right. He ſtopped on the bank, and with pleaſure ſaw the arrangement of the boats. The lord de St. Py, addreſſing him, ſaid, 'My lord, is it agreeable to you that we ſhould croſs here?' 'I am very well pleaſed with it,' replied the marſhal; 'but you are running great riſks; for if our enemies, who are at Commines, ſhould know your intentions, they would do you great miſchief.'

'My lord, anſwered the lord de Saint Py, 'nothing venture, nothing win: in the name of God and St. George, we will croſs over, and, before to-morrow evening, will fall ſuddenly on our enemies and attack them.'

The lord de Saint Py then placed his pennon in the boat, and was the firſt who ſtepped into it: he was followed by nine others, who were as many as the boat could hold; and inſtantly, by means of the cord they held, croſſed over. When diſembarked, in order to prevent themſelves from being diſcovered, they entered a ſmall alder grove, where they lay hidden.

Thoſe on the bank, by means of the cord drew the boat back. The count de Converſant, lord d'Anghien, embarked with his banner, with the lord de Vertain his brother, and ſeven others. Theſe nine then paſſed, and the third time others followed them.

The two other boats now arrived that belonged to ſir Herbaut de Belleperche, ſir John de Roye and the Bretons, which were launched in the ſame manner the firſt had been. Theſe knights then croſſed, and none but determined men at arms did the ſame. It was a pleaſure to ſee with what eagerneſs they embarked: at times, a great crowd was puſhing who ſhould croſs firſt, ſo that if the marſhal of France had not been there, who kept them in proper order, accidents would have happened from their overloading the boats.

News was brought to the conſtable and the lords of France at the bridge of Commines, how their people were croſſing the river, when he ſaid to the ſénéſchal de Rieux, 'Go and examine this paſſage, I beg of you, and ſee if our people be passing as they tell us.' The lord de Rieux was never happier than when he had this commission, and, clapping ſpurs to his horſe, haſtened thither with his whole company, to the amount of full forty men at arms.

When he arrived at the paſſage where one hundred and fifty of his countrymen had already croſſed, he immediately diſmounted, and ſaid he would alſo paſs the river The marſhal of France would

would not refuſe him; and intelligence was ſent to the conſtable, that his couſin the lord de Rieux had croſſed. The conſtable muſed a little, and then ſaid; 'Make the croſs-bows ſhoot, and ſkirmiſh with the Flemings who are on the other ſide of the bridge, to occupy their attention, and prevent them from obſerving our people; for, if they ſhould have any notion what they are about, they will fall upon them, deſtroy the paſſage, and kill all thoſe who have crossed: and I would much rather die than that ſhould happen.'

Upon this, the croſs-bows and infantry advanced. There were among them ſome who flung hand-grenades,* which burſting, caſt out bolts of iron beyond the bridge, even as far as the town of Commines. The skirmiſh now began to be very ſharp, and the van-guard, by their movements, ſeemed determined to croſs the bridge if they could. The Flemings, being ſhielded up to their noſes, made a good appearance, and defended themſelves well. Thus passed this day, which was a Monday, in skirmiſhing; and it was ſoon dark, for at that ſeaſon the days are very ſhort. The boats, however, continued to carry over men at arms in great numbers, who on their landing, hid themſelves in the alder wood, waiting for more.

You may eaſily gueſs what perils they were in; for, had thoſe in Commines gained the leaſt

* I call bombardes hand-grenades: to my mind, it explains this paſſage more eaſily. Lord Berners totally omits it.

intelligence of them, they muſt have had them at their mercy, and conquered the greater part, beſides taking the boats; but God favoured the other party, and conſented that the pride of the Flemings ſhould be humbled.

CHAP. XXXV.

A SMALL BODY OF FRENCH, HAVING CROSSED THE LIS, DRAW UP IN BATTLE ARRAY BEFOR THE FLEMINGS.

I MAINTAIN, that all men of underſtanding muſt hold this enterpriſe of the boats, and paſſage of men at arms, as a deed of ſuperior valour and enterpriſe. Towards evening, the knights and ſquires of the van-guard were eager to croſs with their companions; and the lord de Laval, the viſcount de Rohan, the lord de la Belliere, the lord de Combort, ſir Oliver du Gueſclin, le Barrois des Barres, the lord de Collet, ſir Reginald de Thouars, the lord de Pouſanges, ſir William de Lignac, ſir Walter de Paſſat, le ſire de Thouars, ſir Louis de Conſaule, ſir Triſtan de la Jaille, the viſcount de Meaux, the lord de Mailly, paſſed over, and Bretons, Flemings, Poitevins, French, Berruyers, Burgundians, Artoiſmen, Troyens and Hainaulters in numbers, ſo that late in this Monday evening there were, on the Flanders ſide of the river, about four hundred men at arms, all the flower of

of knighthood: for no varlet was ſuffered to croſs.

The lord Louis de Sancerre, ſeeing ſo many gallant men (ſixteen banners and thirty pennons,) ſaid, he ſhould think himſelf to blame, if he remained behind. He then entered the boats, with his knights and ſquires; and the lord de Hangeſt, &c. croſſed at the ſame time.

When they were all aſſembled, they ſaid, 'It is time to march towards Commines, to look at our enemies, and ſee if we cannot make our quarters good in the town.'

Upon this, they tightened their arms, buckled their helmets on their heads in a proper manner, and, advancing through the marſhes which are contiguous to the river, marched in order of battle, with banners and pennons diſplayed, as if they were immediately to engage. The lord de Saint Py was the principal conductor and commander in chief, becauſe he knew the country better than any of the others.

As they were thus marching in cloſe order, in their way towards the town, Peter du Bois and the Flemings were drawn up on the cauſeway; when, caſting their eyes towards the meads, they ſaw this body of men at arms approaching. They were exceedingly aſtoniſhed, and demanded from Peter du Bois, 'By what devil of a road have theſe men at arms come? and how have they croſſed the Lis?' He replied,—'They muſt have croſſed in boats, and we have known nothing of the matter; for there is neither bridge nor paſſable

paſſable ford over the Lis between this and Courtray.'

'What ſhall we do?' ſaid ſome of them to Peter du Bois: 'ſhall we offer them battle?' 'By no means,' replied Peter: 'let them advance: but we will remain in our ſtrength and in our place: we are on high ground, and they on low, ſo that we have great advantage over them; and, if we deſcend to meet them in the plain, we ſhall loſe it. Let us wait until the night become more obſcure, and then we will conſider how we had beſt act. They are not of force ſufficient to withſtand us in battle; and beſides, we are acquainted with all the roads of the country of which they muſt be ignorant.'

This advice was followed; for the Flemings never budged from their poſt, but remained ſteady at the foot of the bridge, drawn up in order of battle on the cauſeway, in ſilence, and, by their appearance ſeemed as if they had not noticed what was paſſing. Thoſe who had croſſed the river continued advancing ſlowly through the marshes, following the courſe of it as they approached Commines.

The conſtable of France, on the oppoſite ſide of the water, ſaw his men at arms, with banners and pennons fluttering in the wind, drawn up in a handſome ſmall battalion, and marching toward Commines. On ſeeing this, his blood began to run cold from the great dread he had of their being defeated; for he knew the Flemings were in great force on that ſide of the water.

water. In the exceſs of rage, he cried out—'Ah, St. Ives! ha, St. George! ha, our Lady! what do I ſee there? I ſee in part the flower of our army, who are moſt unequally matched. I would rather have died than have witneſſed this. Ah! ſir Louis de Sancerre, I thought you more temperate and better taught than I ſee you now are; how could you have hazarded ſo many noble knights and ſquires, and men at arms, againſt ten or twelve thouſand men, who are proud, preſumptuous and well prepared, and who will ſhew them no mercy, whilſt we are unable, if there should be a neceſſity, to aid them? Ah, Rohan! ah, Laval! ah, Rieux! ah, Beaumanoir! ah, Longueville! ah, Rochfort! ah, Manny! ah, Maleſtroit! ah, Converſant! ah, ſuch a one and ſuch a one, how afflicted am I for you all! when, without conſulting me, you have run into ſuch imminent danger. Why am I conſtable of France? for, if you be conquered I shall incur all the blame, and they will ſay I ordered you on this mad enterpriſe.'

The conſtable, before he heard that ſuch numbers of valiant men had croſſed, had forbidden any of thoſe near him to paſs the river; but, when he ſaw the appearance of thoſe who had paſſed, he ſaid aloud, 'I give free liberty for all who wish it to croſs, if they be able.'

At theſe words, the knights and ſquires ſtepped forth, ſeeking means to croſs the bridge; but it was ſoon night, and they were forced to leave off their attempt, though they had begun

to

to lay planks on the beams, and even ſome had placed their targets to make a road; ſo that the Flemings who were in Commines had enough to do to watch them, and were puzzled how to act, for on the one hand they ſaw below the bridge, in the marshes, a large body of men at arms, who had halted with their lances advanced before them, and to whom great reinforcements were coming, and on the other thoſe of the vanguard on the oppoſite ſide of the bridge were conſtantly skirmiſhing with them and exerting themſelves luſtily to repair the bridge.

In this ſituation were the French who had that evening crossed over in boats. They had halted on the marshes, in mud and filth up to their ancles. Now conſider what muſt have been their courage and difficulties, when in theſe long winter nights they thus remained a whole night with their arms and helmets on, with their feet in the mire, and without any ſort of refreshments. Certainly, I ſay, they are worthy of great renown, for they were but a handful of men in comparison with the Flemings in Commines and in that neighbourhood. They dared not, therefore, advance to attack them, and for this reaſon had halted, ſaying among themſelves, "Let us ſtop here until it be day light, when we shall have a ſight of theſe Flemings who quit not the advantage of their entrenchments; but at laſt they will not fail to come to us, and when near we will shout our war cries with a loud voice each his own cry, or the cry of his lord, notwithſtanding

withſtanding all our lords may not have joined us: by this means we ſhall frighten them, when we will fall on them with a thorough good will. It is in the power of God, and within the compaſs of our own ability, to defeat them, for they are badly armed, whilſt our ſpears and ſwords are of well tempered ſteel from Bourdeaux; and the haubergeons* they wear will be a poor defence, and cannot prevent our blows from penetrating through them.' With ſuch hopes as theſe did thoſe who had paſſed the river comfort themſelves, and remain in ſilence during the night.

The conſtable of France, who was on the other ſide of the river, towards Lille, had great anguiſh at heart on their account, and wiſhed himſelf and army in the town of Commines with them. The marſhals of Burgundy and Flanders, and thoſe knights who were near his perſon, in order to comfort him, ſaid; 'My lord do not be caſt down; for all muſt own that thoſe who have croſſed the river are truly valiant, as well as prudent knights, and we muſt believe they will not do any thing but what ſhall be dictated by good ſenſe and valour. They will not engage in combat this day, and you have given permiſſion for all to paſs the river as they can. To-morrow, as ſoon as day-break ſhall appear, let us exert ourſelves to croſs the bridge. We have this day made more proviſion of planks and timber than will be neceſſary, ſo that we

* Haubergeons,—ſmall coats of mail.

may

may be ſoon over to reinforce them, should they have need of it, and theſe wicked people will be prevented from overpowering them.'

Thus was the conſtable of France conſoled by the valiant men in his company.

CHAP. XXXVI.

THE FRENCH WHO HAD CROSSED THE LIS DEFEAT, WITH GREAT SLAUGHTER, PETER DU BOIS AND THE FLEMINGS.—THE VAN-GUARD of THE FRENCH ARMY REPAIR AND PASS OVER THE BRIDGE OF COMMINES.

PETER du Bois knowing theſe men at arms were in the marſhes joining Commines, was not perfectly at his eaſe, for he was uncertain what might be the event. He had, however, under his command, ſix or ſeven thouſand men, to whom, during the night, he had thus ſpoken; 'The men at arms who have croſſed the river to fight with us are neither of iron nor ſteel. They have laboured hard this whole day, and have been all night ſtanding in theſe marſhes, ſo that it is poſſible, towards day-break, they will be overpowered with ſleep. While they are in this ſituation, we will come ſtily to attack them: our numbers are ſufficient to ſurround them: but when we have ſo done, let no one dare to ruſh upon them, but remain ſilent; for when it ſhall be proper time for you to act, I will inform you.' To this command of Peter they all promiſed obedience.

On

On the other hand, the barons, knights and ſquires, who had remained in the marſhes ſo near the enemy, were far from being comfortable: ſome of them were up to their ancles in mud, and others half way up their legs. But their eagerneſs and joy, on gaining this paſs with ſo much honour, (for very gallant deeds of arms were likely to enſue) made them forget all their pains and difficulties. If it had been in ſummer-time, inſtead of the ſeventh day of November, they would have enjoyed it; but now the ground was cold, muddy and dirty, and the nights were long. At times alſo it rained heavily on their heads, but it ran off, as they had their helmets on and every thing prepared for the combat, and were only waiting for the enemy to come and attack them. The great attention they paid to be in readineſs kept up their ſpirits, and made them almoſt forget their ſituation.

The lord de Saint Py full loyally acquitted himſelf in this expedition, as a ſcout and obſerver of what the Flemings were doing, though he was the commander in chief. He was continually on the look-out, and went privily to reconnoitre their motions. On his return, he ſaid to his companions in a low voice, 'Now up: our enemies are very quiet: perhaps they will advance on us at day-break: therefore be on your guard, and prepared to act.' He would then return again, to ſee if any thing were going forward, and then come back to tell what he had obſerved. This he continued to do until the hour which the Flemings had fixed upon to attack

tack them. It was on the point of day when they began their march in close order, without uttering a word. The lord de Saint Py, who was on the watch, no sooner saw this manœuvre than he found they were in earnest, and hastening to his companions, said to them, 'Now, my lords, be alert, we have but to do out utmost, for our enemy is on his march, and will be instantly here. These barons of new date are advancing slowly, and think to catch and surprise us: shew yourselves true men at arms, for we shall have a battle.'

As the lord de Saint Py uttered these words, the knights and squires, with great courage, seized their long Bourdeaux spears, and having grasped them with a hearty will, placed themselves in as good order as any knights or squires could devise.

When the lords who had crossed the river, and, as I have before said, found themselves obliged to halt in the marshes, saw that the Flemings waited their opportunity to attack them, they said among themselves, 'Since we are not in sufficient force to begin the combat, when the Flemings advance upon us they will not know what numbers we are: let us each set up one cry, or that of the lord to whom we may belong whether he be present or not; and, by thus shouting loudly, we shall so much alarm them that they may be defeated. In addition to this, we will receive them on the points of our spears. In this manner did it fall out: for, when the Flemings advanced to the combat, the knights and squires began to utter their war cries, insomuch that the constable

and

and van-guard, who had not yet croſſed the bridge heard them, and ſaid, 'Our friends are engaged: may God help them! for at this moment we are unable to give them any aſſiſtance.'

Peter du Bois marched in front, and was followed by his Flemings; but, when they approached the French, they were received on the ſharp points of their long Bourdeaux ſpears, to which their coats of mail made not more reſiſtance than if they had been of cloth thrice doubled, ſo that they paſſed through their bodies, heads and ſtomachs.

When the Flemings felt theſe ſharp ſpears which impaled them, they fell back, and the French advancing gained ground upon them; for there were none ſo hardy but what feared their ſtrokes. Peter du Bois was one of the firſt wounded and run through by a lance. It came quite out at his ſhoulder: he was alſo wounded on the head, and would have been inſtantly ſlain if it had not been for the body-guard he had formed, of thirty ſtout varlets, who taking him in their arms, carried him as quickly as they could out of the crowd.

The mud from the cauſeway to Commines was ſo deep that all theſe people ſunk in it up to the middle of their legs. The men at arms, who had been long accuſtomed to their profeſſion, drove down and ſlew the Flemings without let or hindrance: they ſhouted, 'Saint Py for ever!' 'Laval, Sancerre, Anghien,' and the war-cries of others who were there. The Flemings were panic-ſtruck, and began to give way, when they ſaw theſe knights attack them ſo vigorouſly and

pierce

pierce them through with their ſpears. They retreated, and falling back on each other, were followed by the French, who marched through them or around them, always attacking the thickeſt bodies. They no more ſpared killing them than if they had been ſo many dogs; and they were in the right, for, had the Flemings conquered, they would have ſerved them the ſame.

The Flemings, finding themſelves thus driven back, and that the men at arms had won the cauſeway and bridge, counſelled together, to ſet fire to the town, in hopes it would cauſe the French to retreat, or enable them to collect their people. This was executed, and fire ſet to ſeveral houſes, which were inſtantly in flames; but they were diſappointed in thinking by this to frighten the French, for they purſued them as valiantly as before, fighting and ſlaying them on the ground, or in the houſes whither they had retreated.

Upon this the Flemings made for the open plain, where they collected in a body. They ſent to Vertain, Poperingue, Bergues, Rollers, Meſieres, Warneton and the other neighbouring towns, to urge them to come to their aſſiſtance at Commines. Thoſe who fled, and the inhabitants of the villages near Commines, began to ſet their bells a-ringing, which clearly ſhewed there was an engagement going forward.

Some of them, however, began to ſlacken, and others to occupy themſelves in ſaving what they could of their goods, and to carry them to Ypres or Courtray. Women and children ran thither, leaving their houſes full of furniture, cattle

tle and grain. Others again marched in haſte towards Commines, to help their countrymen who were fighting.

While all this was paſſing, and thoſe valiant knights who had croſſed the Lis in boats were ſo gallantly engaged, the conſtable and van-guard were buſily employed in attempting to repair the bridge and croſs it. There was a very great throng, for the conſtable had given permission for all to paſs it who could. There was much danger for thoſe who croſſed it firſt; and the lords who did ſo were obliged to ſtep on targets thrown on the beams of the bridge. When they had croſſed, they began to ſtrengthen the bridge, for they found the planks lying on the ground, which they put in their proper places. During the night two waggon-loads of hurdles were brought, which were of great uſe to them, ſo that ſhortly it was made as strong as ever. On the Tueſday the whole van-guard paſſed, took poſſeſſion of the place, and, as they crossed, fixed their quarters in the town.

The earl of Flanders, hearing that the van-guard was engaged at the paſs of Commines, ſent thither ſix thouſand infantry to their assistance; but when they arrived, the buſineſs was over and the bridge rebuilt. The constable ſent them to Warneton to rebuild that bridge, that the baggage might paſs it this Tueſday without delay.

News was brought on Tueſday morning to the king of France at the abbey of Marquette, that the paſs at Commines was won, and the van-guard

on

on the other ſide, which was very agreeable to the king and his uncles. It was inſtantly determined that the king ſhould croſs the river; and, the king having heard maſs with his lords and drank a cup, they mounted their horſes and took the road to Commines. Thoſe of the van-guard who were in Commines drove out the Flemings. There were ſlain of them in the ſtreets and fields about four thouſand, not including thoſe killed in the purſuit, in wind-mills, and in monaſteries, whither they had fled for ſhelter; for, as ſoon as the Bretons had croſſed, they mounted their horſes and began a chace after the Flemings and overrun the country which was then rich and plentiful.

The lords de Rieux, de Laval, de Malestroit, the viſcount de la Belliere and the lord de Combort, with their men, rode on until they came to Vertain, which is a large town: it was taken and burnt, and thoſe found in it were put to death. The Bretons had great profit from their pillage, as well as the others who had ſpread abroad over the country. They found the houſes full of draperies, furs, with cloths of gold and ſilver; for, truſting to the ſtrength of the paſſage over the river Lis, the Flemings had not carried away any thing from their houſes to the ſtrong towns.

The firſt Bretons, Normans and Burgundians who entered Flanders by the paſs at Commines, paid no attention to pieces of cloth, furs or jewels, but to the gold and ſilver which they found. However, thoſe who followed cleared the whole country, for every thing was acceptable to them.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXVII.

PHILIP VON ARTAVELD TAKES MEASURES TO RESIST THE FORCE OF THE KING OF FRANCE.—HE RECEIVES AN ANSWER FROM HIS AMBASSADORS IN ENGLAND.

BAD news ſoon flies abroad. On Tueſday morning Philip von Artaveld heard, while he lay before Oudenarde, that the French had croſſed the Lis on the Monday in boats, and had advanced as far as Commines, having conquered the Flemings poſted there and in the adjacent parts; that about ſix thouſand Flemings had been ſlain, and that Peter du Bois was ſuppoſed to be dead.

Philip was thunderſtruck at this intelligence; and he aſked the lord de Harzelles who was preſent, 'what was to be done.' The lord de Harzelles replied, 'You muſt go to Ghent, and collect as many people as you can in the town, and return with them hither: you muſt then march your whole army to Courtray; for when the king of France learns that you are marching in full force againſt him, he will conſider well before he advances further into the country. We ought in a ſhort time to receive news from our ambaſſadors in England. It may be that the king of England and his uncles will croſs the ſea with a large army, or perhaps they have already done ſo, which will be fortunate for us.'

'I am ſurpriſed,' anſwered Philip, 'how the Engliſh can ſo long delay it, when they know they are to have free entrance into this country; and I marvel what they are thinking of, as well as our people who are there. Notwithſtanding this, I will not heſitate going to Ghent to draw out the arriere-ban, with which I will return and offer battle to the king of France, whatever be the conſequences. I am informed by Peter du Bois, that the king of France has full twenty thouſand men at arms, which conſtitute ſixty thouſand fighting men. I will draw up in battle-array as many to meet him; and if God, out of his grace, and the juſt cauſe we have, ſhould enable me to defeat him, I ſhall be the moſt reſpected lord in the world; if I be diſcomfited, better fortune will befal a greater lord than myſelf.'

As Philip von Artaveld and the lord de Harzelles were thus converſing, ſome ſoldiers arrived who had been at the battle of Commines, who confirmed the firſt intelligence. Philip ſaid, 'And Peter du Bois, is he dead, or a priſoner?' They anſwered, 'Neither; but he has been ſeverely wounded in the battle, and has retired to Bruges.'

At theſe words, Philip mounted his horſe and ordered thirty of his men to do the ſame, when he ſet out for Bruges. He quitted, however, the direct road, to view ſome of the garriſon of Oudenarde who had made a ſally the preceding night, but had been overpowered and ſlain: they were twelve in number who had been put to death.

death. As he was thus examining the dead, he ſaw, coming towards him from Ghent, a herald attached to the king of England, whoſe name was Chandos, though called Ireland king at arms. Philip was much pleaſed at the arrival of this herald, and aſked 'what news he had brought.' 'My lord,' replied the herald, 'five of your ambaſſadors returned to Ghent, accompanied by a knight called ſir William Frenenton*, who, by orders from the king and council, bring letters (as we learnt from them at Dover) addreſſed to you as regent of Flanders. When you know the contents of theſe letters, and approve of the great alliance offered to you, large reinforcements will be inſtantly ſent you on the return of the knight and his companions to England.'

Philip ſaid,—'I am not well ſatisfied with ſuch an arrangement: the ſuccours will come too late. Go to my quarters.' He ordered him to be conducted to the lodgings of the lord de Harzelles, that he might hear the news; while he took the road to Ghent, but in ſo melancholy a temper of mind that nothing could be got from him, nor could he be perſuaded to enter into any agreeable converſation.

---

* Sir W. Frenington. Q. if not Farringdon.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

THE KING OF FRANCE CROSSES THE LIS AT THE BRIDGE OF COMMINES.—THE TOWN OF YPRES SURRENDERS TO HIM.

WE will now return to the king of France, and ſay how he went on. When intelligence was brought him of Commines being conquered, that the Flemings were diſperſed, and the bridge rebuilt, he ſet out from the abbey of Marquette, where he had lodged, and marched with his whole army in battle-array, as was befitting him to do, towards Commines. The king and his uncles arrived at Commines on the Tueſday, and took up their lodgings in the town; from whence the van-guard had marched for the hill of Ypres, where they had fixed their quarters. On the Wedneſday morning the king advanced to the hill of Ypres, where he remained until the baggage and the remainder of his army ſhould croſs the river at Commines or at Warneton, for there were very numerous trains, and multitudes of horſes.

On Wednesday, the king's rear-guard paſſed the bridge of Commines. It conſiſted of two thouſand men at arms and two thouſand croſsbows, under the command of the count d'Eu, the count de Blois, the count St. Pol, the count de Harcourt, the lords de Châtillon and de la Fere. Theſe lords, with their men, lodged this Wedneſday at Commines.

When

When night came, and theſe lords thought of repoſing themſelves after their march, they heard the cry, 'To arms!' They thought certainly they ſhould have a battle, and that the Flemings from Ypres, Caſſel, Bergues, and their dependencies were collected and on their march to attack them. The lords armed themſelves, put on their helmets, diſplayed their banners before their lodgings; and, having lighted torches, each lord advanced to the cauſeway under his banner or pennon: as their men came, they drew up and arranged themſelves under their proper banners; and thus they remained, half way up their legs in mud, almoſt the whole night. You may imagine if theſe lords had the beſt of it, ſuch as the count de Blois and the others, who had not been accuſtomed to ſuffer ſuch cold and comfortleſs nights as theſe a month before Chriſtmas; but, when their honour was at ſtake, they minded it not, for they thought they ſhould be attacked every moment: however, it was not ſo, for this was a falſe alarm cauſed by a ſcuffle among the varlets. Their lords, however, ſuffered for it, which they bore as well as they could.

On Thurſday morning, the rear-guard diſlodged from Commines, and marched in good order towards their main army, which was encamped on the hill of Ypres, the van-guard, the battalion of the king and all. The principal commanders held a council, to conſider whether they ſhould march to Ypres, Courtray, or Bruges. Whilſt they remained there, the French foragers overran the country, where they found a marvellous

quantity

quantity of beaſts, grain, and all other proviſions; for, ſince they had gained the paſſage at Commines, they were never in want.

The inhabitants of Ypres, finding the king ſo near with his whole army, and the paſſage gained, were not much at their eaſe, and conſidered how they ſhould act. The town-council aſſembled. The richeſt and chief inhabitants, who had been of the moderate party, but who had not dared to ſhew it, propoſed throwing themſelves on the king's mercy, and ſending to him the keys of the town. The governor, who was from Ghent, appointed by Philip von Artaveld, would not liſten to a ſurrender, but ſaid, 'Our town is ſufficiently ſtrong, and we are well provided with every thing. We will ſtand our ground; during which time Philip will aſſemble his forces, to combat the king and raiſe the ſiege.'

Others replied, 'That he was not aſſured this would ſo happen: that it was not in the power of Philip von Artaveld, nor of the whole country, to defeat the king of France, unleſs they had the aſſiſtance of the Engliſh, of which there was not any appearance; and that, in ſhort, the beſt thing they could do would be to ſurrender themſelves to the king of France.'

High words enſued, which ended in a riot, in which the chief inhabitants were maſters. The governor, named Peter Vauclaire, was ſlain. When this was over, they called to them two preaching friars, whom they ſent to the king and his uncles on the hill of Ypres, to know if it were agreeable to them to enter into an amicable treaty with the town.

The

The king was adviſed to grant paſſports to twelve of the citizens and an abbot (who being at Ypres had interfered in this buſineſs) to come to the camp, and explain more fully what their intentions were. The friars returned to the town, when the twelve citizens elected by the council and inhabitants, and the abbot, went to mount Ypres, where, caſting themſelves on their knees, they offered to place the town under the king's obedience for ever, and without any terms of reſervation.

The king of France following the good advice which was given him, to gain the country by gentle means, and not wiſhing to ſhew any ill will or cruelty, received them kindly, and accepted their offer; on condition that the town would pay forty thouſand francs, to defray the ſmaller expenſes which this expedition had hitherto coſt.

The inhabitants of Ypres were much rejoiced at this event, and never afterwards rebelled. Thus were the citizens pardoned. They entreated the king and his uncles would be pleaſed to partake of ſome refreſhments in their town, which would give great joy to the inhabitants. A promiſe was in truth made them, that the king ſhould come thither, when he ſhould be further advanced in Flanders. Upon this the deputation returned to the town, mightily pleaſed to find themſelves at peace with the king of France. The forty thouſand francs were inſtantly raiſed among themſelves, and paid to the king, or to his commiſſioners, before he made his entry into Ypres.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXIX.

THE KING OF FRANCE RECEIVES INFORMATION OF A RIOT AMONG THE PARISIANS—SEVERAL PLACES IN FLANDERS SURRENDER TO HIM.

DURING the time the king of France was encamped on the hill of Ypres, news was brought that the Parisians were in rebellion: and that they had resolved, as it was then reported, to pull down the castle of Beauté, which is situated in the wood of Vincennes, and the castle of the Louvre, as well as all other castellated houses in the neighbourhood of Paris, to prevent being oppressed in future by their means.

One of their leaders made a speech to excite to mischief, but which, however, as it appeared afterwards, turned out quite the contrary:—'My fair firs, let us abstain from doing this, until we see how the king's affairs turn out in Flanders. If the Ghent men succeed, as I truly hope they will, then will be the time to destroy all these castles. Let us not begin any thing which we may repent of afterwards.'

It was Nicholas le Flamand who by this speech made the Parisians give up their intentions of committing outrages. They kept within the walls of Paris, which they had amply supplied with every thing; and had as rich and handsome armour as if they had been great lords. There were upwards of thirty thousand armed

armed from head to foot, like true men at arms, and more than thirty thoufand armed with mallets. They worked day and night in forging helmets, and purchafed armour wherever it was to be fold.

Now confider what a fad devilment it would have been, if the king of France, and the gallant chivalry with which he was accompanied had been defeated in Flanders. It may readily be fuppofed, that then all the nobility would have been deftroyed in France, as well as in other places; for the Jecquerie were never fo ferocious as they would at fuch a time have been.

In like manner the peafants began to rebel at Rheims, at Châlons in Champagne, and down the river Marne, and to menace thofe gentlemen, ladies and children who had remained at home. At Orleans, Blois, Rouen, and in the Beauvoifis, the devil had entered their heads to prompt them to murder every one, if God had not provided a remedy, as you will foon have related.

When thofe of the caftlewicks of Caffel, Bergues, Bourbourg, Gravelines, Furnes, Dunkerque, Poperingue, Tourrout, Vaillant, and Malines, had heard that the men of Ypres had furrendered and put themfelves under the obedience of the king of France, who had graciouſly pardoned them, they began to be much alarmed. After theſe towns had well confidered the buſineſs, the inhabitants feized their governors, whom Philip von Artaveld had put over them, and having bound them ſtrongly, ſo that they could

could not eſcape, led them to the king on mount Ypres, in order to pleaſe him and to appeaſe his anger. On their arrival, they caſt themſelves on their knees, and ſaid,—'Noble king, we put our lives, towns, and fortunes under your obedience, and wiſh ſo to remain. In order to ſhew that we regard you as our true lord, here are the governors whom Philip von Artaveld had ſet over us; for by force, and not otherwiſe, has he made us obey him: you may do your pleaſure with them, for they have governed us according to their wills.'

The king was adviſed by his lords to grant his pardon to all theſe towns: on condition, however, that they ſhould pay him, as part of his expenſes in this war, ſixty thouſand francs. All the proviſions were to be given up, and whatever cattle might be found in the fields; but they were aſſured that their towns ſhould neither be burnt nor pillaged. This was very ſatisfactory to them, and they greatly thanked the king and his council. They were much rejoiced on finding they had eſcaped ſo well; but the governors of Philip von Artaveld, who had been carried thither, were beheaded on the bridge of Ypres.

No mention whatever was made in theſe treaties and ſubmiſſions of the earl of Flanders: nor was he, or any one of his court, ever ſummoned to the councils of the king. If he was diſpleaſed at this I am ignorant, but during the whole expedition he was treated in the ſame manner. None of his people were permitted to quit the army, or the battalion which was poſted by orders

ders of the maſter of the croſs-bows, on the wings, although they were Flemings. It was alſo ordered by the king, under pain of death, that no one in the army ſhould ſpeak Flemiſh, nor carry any ſtick bound with iron.

CHAP. XL.

THE KING OF FRANCE LODGES IN YPRES—PETER DU BOIS PREVENTS BRUGES FROM SURRENDERING TO THE KING.—PHILIP VON ARTAVELD ASSEMBLES HIS FORCES TO COMBAT THE FRENCH.

WHILE the king and his whole army were on mount Ypres, many markets were there held, and plenty of pillage was ſold to thoſe of Lille, Douay, and Tournay; indeed to all who wiſhed to buy. A piece of cloth of Vexin, Malines, Poperingue or Commines, was ſold for one franc. People were clothed there too cheaply.

Some Bretons and other pillagers, determined on gain, went in large bodies, and loaded carts and horſes with their booty of cloths, linen, knives, money in gold and ſilver, diſhes and plates of ſilver wherever they found them, which they ſent, well packed up, to a place of ſafety on the other ſide of the Lis, or by their ſervants into France.

The king and all the lords came to Ypres, where

where they quartered themſelves as well as they could, and in as great numbers as the town would hold. They remained there to refreſh themſelves four or five days.

The inhabitants of Bruges had received information of the conduct of the king, that he was at Ypres, and how the whole country, as far as Gravelines, had ſummitted to him. They were doubtful whether to negotiate with the king, or let it alone: however, for the preſent they did nothing. The principal cauſe which withheld them from ſurrendering was the great number of men at arms which Philip von Artaveld had with him from their town; for there were at leaſt ſeven thouſand at the ſiege of Oudenarde; and their principal citizens were at Ghent as hoſtages, in order that Peter du Bois might more eaſily govern the place.

Beſides, Peter du Bois and Peter le Nuitre were in the town, who comforted them, ſaying, 'My good gentlemen, do not be alarmed if the king of France is come to Ypres: you know that formerly the whole power of France was ſent by king Philip to Courtray*, and could not withſtand the courage of our fathers, for his whole army was ſlain and defeated. Know then, that this army ſhall in like manner be deſtroyed; for Philip von Artaveld, with an immenſe force, will not leave things thus without combating the king. It may very well happen,

* Courtray. The battle 1302.

that

that from the good cauſe we are engaged in, and the good fortune which follows Ghent, Philip may defeat the king, ſo that not one ſhall eſcape or recroſs the river, but the whole country which has ſubmitted will be inſtantly reconquered. Thus will you remain like true and loyal men in your franchiſes, and in the grace of Philip and of us Ghent men.'

With ſuch ſpeeches as this, Peter du Bois and Peter le Nuitre daily harangued the men of Bruges, and reſtrained them from entering into any treaty with the king of France.

While theſe things were going on, the citizens of Ghent, with ſir William Fermiton*, arrived at Calais, from England, to conclude and ſeal thoſe treaties and agreements which the Engliſh wiſhed to enter into with the Flemings. Sir John Devereux, governor of Calais, ſent for them, and told them, 'that they could not continue their journey at that time, for the king of France was at Ypres, and that all the country, from Calais to Ypres, had ſurrendered to him. We ſhall ſhortly have more news: for it is reported that Philip von Artaveld is aſſembling his forces to

* Fermiton. Froiſſart before calls him Fremeton. I ſhould have ſuppoſed this perſon was ſir William Farendon, or Frampton, if, in the Rolles François, the names of thoſe ſent by Richard had not been particularly named, as may be ſeen underneath.

Ann. Dom. 1382-1383. Membrana 4.

'De poteſtate data Johanni Devereux, Briano de Stapilton, Willielmo Ermyn, & Johanni de Burley, ad tractandum cum comiti Flandriæ & gentibus ibidem de debatis, & de attemptatis reformandis.'—Data apud Weſtminſter, 16th May.

combat

combat the king of France, and we ſhall ſee who will have the beſt of it. Should the Flemings be beaten, you have nothing to do in Flanders; and if the king of France be defeated, it is all our own. 'This,' ſaid the Engliſh knight, 'you may depend upon as truth.' The intelligence detained the citizens of Ghent and ſir William Fermiton.

We will now return to Philip, and ſay what he was doing. Being eager to combat the king of France, as he plainly ſhewed, he ordered, on his arrival at Ghent, every man capable of bearing arms, after leaving a ſufficient garriſon in the town, to follow him. All obeyed; for he gave them to underſtand, that by the grace of God, they would defeat the French, be lords of Ghent, and rank as ſovereigns among other nations.

Philip von Artaveld carried with him about ten thouſand men as the arriere-ban: he had before ſent to Bruges, Damme, Ardembourg, Sluys, to the ſea-coaſts, the Quatre Meſtiers, and conſtablewicks of Grammont, Dendremonde, and Aloſt, and had raiſed from thoſe places about thirty thouſand more. He and his whole army were quartered one night before Oudenarde: on the morrow they marched away, and came before Courtray: he had with him about fifty thouſand men.

The king of France received intelligence, that Philip von Artaveld was approaching, and, as it was ſaid, with full ſixty thouſand men. Upon this, the van-guard ſet off from Ypres, under the command

command of the conſtable and marſhals of France, and encamped a league and a half from Ypres, between Rollers and Roſebecque: on the morrow, the king and all the lords, with the main battalion and rear-guard, quartered themſelves there alſo.

I muſt ſay that theſe lords, whilſt they were in the field, ſuffered greatly; for it was in the heart of winter, the beginning of December, and it rained every day. They ſlept on the roads every night, for they were daily and hourly in expectation of a battle: it was commonly ſaid in the army, 'They will come to-morrow;' which they believed, from the news the foragers brought when they returned from their excurſions.

The king was quartered in the midſt of his army. The lords of France were much vexed at Philip for delaying, for they were very impatient of being out in ſuch bad weather. It ſhould be known, that with the king was all the flower of French knighthood: it was therefore highly preſumptuous in Philip von Artaveld and the Flemings to think of fighting with them; for if they had been ſatisfied with continuing their ſiege of Oudenarde, and had ſlightly entrenched themſelves, the French, conſidering the wetneſs of the ſeaſon, would never have marched to ſeek them; and, if they had done ſo, they would have combated them under the greateſt diſadvantages. But Philip was ſo vain of the good fortune he had met with at Bruges, that he thought nothing could withſtand him,

and

and he hoped he ſhould be lord of the world. No other thoughts had he, and was nothing afraid of the king of France nor his army; for, if he had entertained any fears, he would not have done that which he did, as you ſhall hear related.

CHAP. XLI.

PHILIP VON ARTAVELD, HAVING ENTERTAINED HIS CAPTAINS AT SUPPER, GIVES THEM INSTRUCTIONS HOW THEY ARE TO ACT ON THE MORROW AT THE BATTLE OF ROSEBECQUE.—WONDERFUL APPEARANCES IN THE HEAVENS ARE SEEN DURING THIS NIGHT.

PHILIP von Artaveld, with his whole army, on the Wedneſday evening preceding the battle, was encamped in a handſome poſition, tolerably ſtrong, between a ditch and grove, and with ſo good a hedge in front that they could not eaſily be attacked. It was between the hill and town of Roſebecque where the king was quartered.

That ſame evening, Philip gave a magnificent ſupper to his captains at his quarters; for he had wherewithal to do ſo, as his proviſions followed him. When the ſupper was over, he addreſſed them in theſe words: 'My fair gentlemen, you are

are my companions in this expedition, and I hope to-morrow we ſhall have ſomething to do; for the king of France, who is impatient to meet and fight with us, is quartered at Roſebecque. I therefore beg of you to be loyal, and not alarmed at any thing you ſhall ſee or hear; for we are combating in a just cauſe, to preſerve the franchiſes of Flanders, and for our right. Admoniſh your men to behave well, and draw them up in ſuch manner that, by this means and our courage, we may obtain the victory. To-morrow, through God's grace, we ſhall no find any lord to combat with us, or any who will dare take the field, unleſs he mean to remain there, and we ſhall gain greater honour than if we could have depended on the ſupport of the Engliſh; for, if they had been with us, they alone would have gained all the reputation. The whole flower of the French nobility is with the king, for he has not left one behind: order, therefore, your men not to grant quarter to any one, but to kill all who fall in their way. By this means we ſhall remain in peace; for I will and command, under pain of death, that no priſoners be made, except it be the king of France. With regard to the king, I wiſh to ſupport him, as he is but a child and ought to be forgiven; for he knows not what he does, and acts according as he is inſtructed: we will carry him to Ghent and teach him Flemiſh; but as for dukes, earls and other men at arms, kill them all. The common people of France will never be angry with us for ſo doing; for

they wiſh, as I am well aſſured, that not one ſhould ever return to France, and it ſhall be ſo.'

His companions who were preſent at this diſcourſe, and who were from the different towns in Flanders and the country of Bruges, agreed to this propoſal, which they thought a proper one, and with one voice replied to Philip, 'You ſay well, and thus ſhall it be.' They then took leave of Philip, and each man returned to his quarters, to order his men how they were to act conformably to the inſtructions they had juſt had. Thus paſſed the night in the army of Philip: but about midnight, as I have been informed, there happened a moſt wonderful event, and ſuch that I have never heard any thing equal to it related.

When theſe Flemiſh captains had retired, and all gone to their quarters to repoſe, the night being far advanced, thoſe upon guard fancied they heard a great noiſe towards the Mont d'Or. Some of them were ſent to ſee what it could be, and if the French were making any preparations to attack them in the night. On their return, they reported, they had been as far as the place whence the noiſe came, but that they had diſcovered nothing.

This noiſe, however, was ſtill heard, and it ſeemed to ſome of them that their enemies were on the mount about a league diſtant; this was alſo the opinion of a damſel from Ghent whom Philip von Artaveld had carried with him, on this expedition, as his ſweetheart.

Whilſt Philip was ſleeping under his tent on a coverlid,

coverlid near the coal-fire, this damſel went out of the tent about midnight, to examine the ſky, and ſee what ſort of weather it was and the time of night, for ſhe was unable to ſleep. She looked towards Roſebecque, and ſaw, in divers parts of the ſky, ſmoke and ſparks of fire flying about, cauſed by the fires the French were making under hedges and buſhes. This woman liſtened attentively, and thought ſhe heard a great noiſe between their army and that of the French, and alſo the cry of Montjoye and ſeveral other cries; and it ſeemed to her that they came from the Mont d'Or, between the camp and Roſebecque. She was exceedingly frightened, returned to the tent, awakened Philip, and ſaid to him,—'Sir, riſe inſtantly and arm yourſelf; for I have heard a great noiſe on the Mont d'Or, which I believe to be made by the French who are coming to attack you.'

Philip at theſe words aroſe, and wrapping himſelf in a gown, took a battle-axe and went out of his tent to liſten to this noiſe. In like manner as ſhe had heard it, Philip did the ſame; and it ſeemed to him as if there were a great tournament. He directly returned to his tent, and ordered his trumpet to be ſounded to awaken the army.

As ſoon as the ſound of the trumpet was heard, it was known to be his. Thoſe of the guard in front of the camp armed themſelves, and ſent ſome of their companions to Philip to know what he wiſhed to have done, as he was thus early arming himſelf. On their arrival,

he wanted to ſend them to the part whence the noiſe had come, to find out what it could be; but they reported that that had already been done, and that there was no cauſe found for it. Philip was much aſtoniſhed; and they were greatly blamed, that having heard a noiſe towards the enemy's quarters, they had remained quiet. 'Ha,' ſaid they to Philip, 'in truth we did hear a noiſe towards the Mont d'Or, and we ſent to know what it could be; but thoſe who had been ordered thither, reported that there was nothing to be found or ſeen. Not having ſeen any poſitive appearance of a movement of the enemy, we were unwilling to alarm the army leſt we ſhould be blamed for it.'

This ſpeech of the guard ſomewhat appeaſed Philip; but in his own mind he marvelled much what it could be. Some ſaid it was the devils of hell running and dancing about the place where the battle was to be, for the abundance of prey they expected.

Neither Philip von Artaveld nor the Flemings were quite at their eaſe after this alarm. They were ſuſpicious of having been betrayed and ſurpriſed. They armed themſelves leiſurely with whatever they had, made large fires in their quarters, and breakfaſted comfortably, for they had victuals in abundance.

About an hour before day, Philip ſaid; 'I think it right that we march into the plain and draw up our men; becauſe ſhould the French advance to attack us, we ought not to be unprepared, nor in diſorder, but properly drawn

up

up like men, knowing well what we are to do.' All obeyed this order, and, quitting their quarters, marched to a heath beyond the grove. There was in front a wide ditch newly made, and in their rear quantities of brambles, junipers and ſhrubs. They drew up at their leiſure in this ſtrong poſition, and formed one large battalion thick and ſtrong. By the reports from the conſtables they were about fifty thouſand, all choſen men, who valued not their lives. Among them were about ſixty Engliſh archers, who, having ſtolen away from their companions at Calais, to gain greater pay from Philip, had left behind them their armour in their quarters.

Every thing being arranged, each man took to his arms. The horſes, baggage, women and varlets were diſmiſſed: but Philip von Artaveld had his page mounted on a ſuperb courſer, worth five hundred florins, which he had ordered to attend him, to diſplay his ſtate, and to mount if a purſuit of the French ſhould happen, in order that he might enforce the commands which he had given to kill all. It was with this intention that Philip had poſted him by his ſide. Philip had likewiſe from the town of Ghent about nine thouſand men, well armed, whom he placed near his perſon; for he had greater confidence in them than in any of the others: they therefore, with Philip at their head with banners diſplayed, were in front; and thoſe from Aloſt and Grammont were next: then the men from Courtray, Bruges, Damme, Sluys and the Fronconate. They

were

were armed, for the greater part, with bludgeons, iron caps, jerkins and with gloves, *de fer de baleine*. Each man had a ſtaff with an iron point, and bound round with iron. The different townſmen wore liveries and arms, to diſtinguiſh them from one another. Some had jackets of blue and yellow, others wore a welt of black on a red jacket, others chevroned with white on a blue coat, others green and blue, others lozenged with black and white, others quartered red and white, others all blue. Each carried the banners of their trades. They had alſo large knives hanging down from their girdles. In this ſtate they remained, quietly waiting for day, which ſoon came.

I will now relate to you the proceedings of the French as fully as I have done thoſe of the Flemings.

CHAP. XLII.

KING CHARLES ENTERTAINS AT SUPPER HIS UNCLES AND SOME OTHERS OF HIS PRINCIPAL BARONS, ON THE EVE OF THE BATTLE OF ROSEBECQUE. THE CONSTABLE DE CLISSON IS EXCUSED FROM ATTENDING THE KING'S PERSON DURING THE BATTLE.

THE king of France, and the lords with him, knew well that the Flemings were advancing, and that a battle muſt be the conſequence; for no propoſals for peace were offered, and all ſeemed to have made up their minds for an engagement. It had been proclaimed on the Wedneſday morning in the town

town of Ypres, that the men at arms ſhould follow the king into the field, and poſt themſelves according to the inſtructions they had received. Every one obeyed this order, and no man at arms, or even luſty varlet, remained in Ypres, except thoſe appointed to guard the horſes, which had been conducted to Ypres when their lords diſmounted. However, the van-guard had many with them for the uſe of their light troops, and to reconnoitre the battalions of the enemy; for to them they were of more ſervice than to the others.

The French on this Wedneſday remained in the plain pretty near to Roſebecque, where the lords and captains were buſy in arranging their plans. In the evening the king gave a ſupper to his three uncles, the conſtable of France, the lord de Coucy, and to ſome other foreign lords from Brabant, Hainault, Holland, Zealand, Germany, Lorraine and Savoy, who had come thither to ſerve him. He, as well as his uncles, thanked them much for the good ſervices they had done and were willing to do for them. The earl of Flanders this evening commanded the guard of the king's battalion, and had under him ſix hundred lances, and twelve hundred other men.

After the ſupper which the king had given on the Wedneſday to theſe lords, and when they had retired, the conſtable of France remained to converſe with the king and his uncles. It had been arranged in the council with the king, that the conſtable, ſir Oliver de Cliſſon, ſhould reſign his conſtableſhip for the mor-

row

row (as they fully expected a battle) and that, for the day only, the lord de Coucy was to take his place, and ſir Oliver remain near the king's perſon; ſo that when the conſtable was taking his leave, the king ſaid to him, as he had been inſtructed, in a courteous and agreeable manner; 'Conſtable, we will that you reſign to us, for to-morrow only, your office; for we have appointed another, and you ſhall remain near our perſon.'

Theſe words, which were new to the gallant conſtable, ſurpriſed him ſo much, that he replied; 'Moſt dear lord, I well know that I never can be more highly honoured than in guarding your perſon; but, dear lord, it will give great diſpleaſure to my companions, and thoſe of the van-guard, if they do not ſee me with them: and we may loſe more than we can gain by it. I do not pretend that I am ſo valiant, that the buſineſs will be done by me alone; but I declare, dear lord, under the correction of your noble council, that for theſe laſt fifteen days, I have been ſolely occupied how I could add to your honour, to that of your army, and to my own office. I have inſtructed the army in the manner in which they were to be drawn up: and if, to-morrow, under the guidance of God, we engage, and they do not ſee me; or, if I fail in giving them advice and ſupport, I who have always been accuſtomed in ſuch caſes ſo to do, they will be thunderſtruck; ſome may ſay I am a hypocrite, and have done this ſlily, in order to eſcape from the firſt blows. I therefore entreat of you, moſt dear

dear lord, that you would not interfere in what has been arranged and ordered for the best, for I must ſay you will gain the more by it.'

The king did not know what anſwer to make to this ſpeech, any more than thoſe preſent who had heard it. At last the king ſaid, very properly, 'Conſtable, I do not mean to ſay that it has been any way thought you have not, on every occaſion, most fully acquitted yourſelf, and will still do ſo; but my late lord and father loved you more than any other perſon, and had the greatest confidence in you: it is from this love and confidence which he repoſed in you that I ſhould wiſh to have you on this occaſion near to me, and in my company.

'Very dear lord,' replied the conſtable, 'you will be ſo well attended by ſuch valiant men, all having been ſettled with the greatest deliberation, that it cannot any way be amended, ſo that you and your council ought to be ſatisfied with it. I therefore beg of you, for the love of God, most dear lord, that you will permit me to execute my office; and to-morrow your ſucceſs ſhall be ſuch that your friends will be rejoiced, and your enemies enraged.'

To this the king only anſwered; 'Conſtable, I will it be ſo: in God's name, and in the name of St. Denis, act as becomes your office. I will not ſay one word more to you on the ſubject; for you ſee clearer in this buſineſs than I do, or thoſe who first propoſed it. Be to-morrow at maſs.' 'Willingly, ſir,' replied the conſtable. He took leave of the king, who ſaluted him, and returned to his quarters, with his attendants and companions.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLIII.

PHILIP VON ARTAVELD AND HIS FLEMINGS QUIT THE STRONG POSITION THEY HAD TAKEN IN THE MORNING, TO ENCAMP ON MONT D'OR, NEAR TO YPRES.—THE CONSTABLE AND ADMIRAL OF FRANCE, WITH THE BASTARD OF LANGRES, SET OUT TO RECONNOITRE THEIR SITUATION.

ON the Thurſday morning all the men at arms of the army, the van-guard, the rear-guard and the king's battalion, armed themſelves completely, except their helmets, as if they were about to engage: for the lords well knew the day could not paſs without a battle, from the reports of the foragers on the Wedneſday evening, who had ſeen the Flemings on their march demanding a battle.

The king of France heard maſs, as did the other lords, who all devoutly prayed to God, that the day might turn out to their honour. In the morning there was a thick miſt, which continued ſo long that no one could ſee the diſtance of an acre: the lords were much vexed at this, but they could not remedy it.

After the king's maſs, which had been attended by the conſtable and other great lords, it was ordered that thoſe valiant knights ſir Oliver de Cliſſon conſtable of France, ſir John de Vienne admiral of France and ſir William de Poitiers baſtard of Langres, who had been long

uſed

uſed to arms, ſhould reconnoitre the poſition of the Flemings, and report to the king and his uncles the truth of it: during which time, the lord d'Albreth and ſir Hugh de Châtillon were employed in forming the battalions.

Theſe three knights, leaving the king, ſet off on the flower of their ſteeds and rode towards that part where they thought they ſhould find the Flemings, and towards the ſpot where they had encamped the preceding night.

You muſt know that on the Thurſday morning, when the thick miſt came on, the Flemings having, as you have before heard, marched, before day-break, to this ſtrong poſition, had there remained until about eight o'clock, when, not ſeeing nor hearing any thing of the French, their numbers excited in them pride and ſelf-ſufficiency; and their captains, as well as others, began thus to talk among themſelves: 'What are we about thus ſtanding ſtill, and almoſt frozen with cold? Why do we not advance with courage, ſince ſuch is our inclination, and ſeek our enemies to combat them? We remain here to no purpoſe, for the French will never come to look for us. Let us at leaſt march to Mont d'Or, and take advantage of the mountain.

Many ſuch ſpeeches were made, and they all conſented to march to Mont d'Or, which was between them and the French. In order to avoid the ditch in their front, they turned the grove and entered the plain. Whilſt they were thus on their march round the grove, the three knights

knights came ſo opportunely that they reconnoitred them at their eaſe, and rode by the ſide of their battalions, which were again formed within a bow-ſhot from them. When they had conſidered them on the left, they did the ſame on the right, and thus carefully and fully examined them.

The Flemings ſaw them plainly, but paid not any attention to them; nor did any one quit his ranks. The three knights were well mounted, and ſo much uſed to this buſineſs that they cared not for them. Philip ſaid to his captains,—'Our enemies are near at hand: let us draw up here in battle-array for the combat. I have ſeen ſtrong appearances of their intentions: for theſe three horſemen who paſs and repaſs have reconnoitred us, and are ſtill doing ſo.'

Upon this, the Flemings halted on the Mont d'Or, and formed in one thick and ſtrong battalion; when Philip ſaid aloud,—'Gentlemen, when the attack begins, remember our enemies were defeated and broken at the battle of Bruges by our keeping in a compact body. Be careful not to open your ranks, but let every man ſtrengthen himſelf as much as poſſible and bear his ſtaff right before him. You will intermix your arms, ſo that no one may break you, and march ſtraight forward with a good ſtep, without turning to the right or left; and act together, ſo that, when the conflict begins, you may throw your bombardes and ſhoot with your croſs-bows in ſuch manner that our enemies may be thunderſtruck with ſurpriſe.'

When

When Philip had formed his men in battle array, and told them how they were to act, he went to the wing of his army in which he had the greateſt confidence. Near him was his page on the courſer, to whom he ſaid,—'Go, wait for me at that buſh out of bow-ſhot; and, when thou ſhalt ſee the diſcomfiture of the French and the purſuit begin, bring me my horſe and ſhout my cry; they will make way for thee to come to me, for I wiſh to be the firſt in the purſuit.'

The page, on theſe words, left his maſter and did as he had ordered him. Philip placed near him, on the ſide of this wing, forty Engliſh archers whom he had in his pay. Now, if it be conſidered how well Philip had arranged this buſineſs, I am of opinion, and in this I am joined by ſeveral others, that he well knew the art of war: but in one inſtance, which I will relate, he acted wrong. It was in quitting the firſt ſtrong poſition he had taken in the morning; for they would never have fought to fight him there, as it would have been too much to their diſadvantage; but he wiſhed to ſhew that his people were men of courage, and had little fear of their enemies.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLIV.

THE BATTLE OF ROSEBECQUE, BETWEEN THE FRENCH AND FLEMINGS.—PHILIP VON ARTAVELD IS SLAIN, AND HIS WHOLE ARMY DEFEATED.

THE three knights returned to the king of France and to his battalions, which had already been formed and were marching ſlowly in order of battle; for there were many prudent and brave men, who had been long accuſtomed to arms, in the van-guard, in the king's battalion, and in the rear-guard, who knew well what they were to do, for they were the flower of chivalry in Chriſtendom. Way was made for them; and the lord de Cliſſon ſpoke firſt, bowing to the king from his horſe, and taking off the beaver he wore, ſaying, 'Sire, rejoice: theſe people are our own, and our luſty varlets will fight well with them.' 'Conſtable,' replied the king, 'God aſſiſt you! now advance, in the name of God and St. Denis.'

The knights, before mentioned as the king's body-guard, now drew up in good order. The king created many new knights, as did different lords in their battalions, ſo that ſeveral new banners were diſplayed.

It was ordered, that when the engagement was about to commence, the battalion of the king, with the oriflamme of France, ſhould march to the front of the army, that the van and rear guards ſhould form the two wings as ſpeedily as poſſible, and by this means incloſe

and

and straiten the Flemings, who were drawn up in the cloſeſt order, and gain a great advantage over them. Notice of this intended movement was ſent to the rear-guard, of which the count d'Eu, the count de Blois, the count de St. Pol, the count de Harcourt, the count de Châtillon and the lord de la Fere were commanders.

The young lord de Haurel diſplayed his banner this day before the count de Blois, who alſo knighted ſir Thomas d'Istre, and the baſtard ſir James de Hameth. According to the report of the heralds, there were this day created four hundred and ſixty-ſeven knights.

The lord de Cliſſon, ſir John de Vienne and ſir William de Langres, having made their report to the king, left him and went to their poſt in the van-guard. Shortly afterwards, the oriflamme was diſplayed by ſir Peter de Villiers who bore it. Some ſay (as they find it written) that it was never before diſplayed againſt Chriſtians, and that it was a matter of great doubt during the march whether it ſhould be diſplayed or not. However, the matter having been fully conſidered, they reſolved to diſplay it, becauſe the Flemings followed opinions contrary to that of pope Clement, and called themſelves Urbanists; for which the French ſaid they were rebellious and out of the pale of the church. This was the principal cauſe why it had been brought and diſplayed in Flanders.

The oriflamme* was a moſt excellent banner,

* The oriflamme was a ſacred banner carefully preſerved in

ner, and had been ſent from heaven with great mystery: it is a ſort of gonfanon*, and is of much comfort in the day of battle to thoſe who ſee it. Proof was made of its virtues at this time; for all the morning there was ſo thick a fog that with difficulty could they ſee each other, but the moment the knight had diſplayed it and raiſed his lance in the air this fog instantly diſperſed, and the ſky was as clear as it had been during the whole year.

The lords of France were much rejoiced when they ſaw this clear day, and the ſun ſhine, ſo that they could look about them on all ſides.

It was a fine ſight to view theſe banners, helmets and beautiful emblazoned arms: the army kept a dead ſilence, not uttering a ſound, but eyed the large battalion of Flemings before them, who were marching in a compact body, with their staves advanced in the air, which looked like ſpears, and, ſo great were their numbers, they had the appearance of a wood.

The lord d'Estonnenort told me, that he ſaw (as well as ſeveral others) when the oriflamme was diſplayed, and the fog had diſperſed, a white dove fly many times round the king's battalion. When it had made ſeveral circles, and the engagement

---

of a red colour, and had the name of St. Dionyſius on it. This was never called out but on the moſt urgent occaſions, when the king himſelf was preſent, and to be diſplayed ſolely againſt heretics.

* Gonfanon was a ſquare pennon fixed to the end of a lance: ſuch are now uſed in Italy: and the bearer was called Gonfanonier, or Gonfaloniere.

was

was about to begin, it perched on one of the king's banners: this was conſidered as a fortunate omen.

The Flemings advanced ſo near that they commenced a cannonade with bars of iron, and quarrels headed with braſs. Thus was the battle begun by Philip and his men againſt the king's battalion, which at the outſet was very ſharp: for the Flemings, inflamed with pride and courage, came on with vigour, and, puſhing with ſhoulders and breaſts like enraged wild boars, they were ſo ſtrongly interlaced one with the other, that they could not be broken, nor their ranks forced.

By this attack, of cannons and bombardes, the lord d'Albaruin, banneret, Morlet de Haruin, and James Doré, on the ſide of the French, were firſt ſlain, and the king's battalion obliged to fall back. But the van and rear guards puſhed forward, and, by incloſing the Flemings, ſtraitened them much. Upon the two wings theſe men at arms made their attack: and, with their well tempered lances of Bourdeaux, pierced through their coats of mail to the fleſh. All who were aſſailed by them drew back to avoid the blows, for never would thoſe that eſcaped return to the combat: by this means, the Flemings were ſo ſtraitened that they could not uſe their ſtaves to defend themſelves. They loſt both ſtrength and breath, and, falling upon one another, were ſtifled to death without ſtriking a blow.

Philip von Artaveld was ſurrounded, wounded by ſpears, and beaten down, with numbers of the Ghent men who were his guards. When

Philip's page ſaw the ill-ſucceſs of his countrymen, being well mounted on his courſer, he ſet off, and left his maſter, for he could not give him any aſſiſtance, and returned towards Courtray, on his way to Ghent.

When the Flemings found themſelves incloſed on two ſides, there was an end to the buſineſs, for they could not aſſiſt each other. The king's battalion, which had been ſomewhat diſordered at the beginning, now recovered.

The men at arms knocked down the Flemings with all their might. They had well ſharpened battle-axes, with which they cut through helmets and diſbrained heads: others gave ſuch blows with leaden maces that nothing could withſtand them, Scarcely were the Flemings overthrown before the pillagers advanced, who, mixing with the men at arms, made uſe of the large knives they carried, and finiſhed ſlaying whoever fell into their hands, without more mercy than if they had been ſo many dogs. The clattering on the helmets, by the axes and leaden maces, was ſo loud, that nothing elſe could be heard for the noiſe. I was told that if all the armourers of Paris and Bruxelles had been there working at their trade, they could not have made a greater noiſe than theſe combatants did on the helmets of their enemies; for they ſtruck with all their force, and ſet to their work with the greateſt good will.

Some, indeed, preſſed too forward into the crowd, and were ſurrounded and ſlain: in particular ſir Louis de Gouſalz, a knight from Berry, and ſir Fleton de Reniel. There were ſeveral more,

more, which was a great pity; but in ſuch a battle as this, where ſuch numbers were engaged, it is not poſſible for victory to be obtained without being dearly bought; for young knights and ſquires, eager to gain renown, willingly run into perils in hopes of honour.

The crowd was now ſo great, and ſo dangerous for thoſe incloſed in it, that the men at arms, if not inſtantly aſſiſted, could not raiſe themſelves when once down. By this were ſeveral of the French killed and ſmothered; but they were not many, for when in danger they helped each other. There was a large and high mount of the Flemings who were ſlain; and never was there ſeen ſo little blood ſpilt at ſo great a battle, where ſuch numbers were killed.

When thoſe in the rear ſaw the front fail, and that they were defeated, they were greatly aſtoniſhed, and began to throw away their staves and armour, to diſband and fly towards Courtray and other places, not having any care but to ſave themſelves if poſſible. The Bretons and French purſued them into ditches, alder groves and heaths, where they fought with and ſlew them. Numbers were killed in the purſuit, between the field of battle and Courtray, whither they were flying in their way to Ghent.

This battle on Mont d'Or took place the 27th day of November, on the Thurſday before Advent, in the year of grace 1382; and at that time the king of France was fourteen years of age.

CHAP. XLV.

THE NUMBER OF SLAIN AT THE BATTLE OF ROSEBECQUE AND PURSUIT AFTERWARDS.—PHILIP VON ARTAVELD IS HANGED AFTER HE WAS DEAD.—THE SIEGE OF OUDENARDE IS RAISED.—PETER DU BOIS RETREATS TO GHENT.—THE KING OF FRANCE FIXES HIS QUARTERS IN THE TOWN OF COURTRAY.

THUS were the Flemings defeated on Mont d'Or, their pride humbled, and Philip von Artaveld ſlain; and with him nine thouſand men from Ghent and its dependencies, (according to the report of the heralds) on the ſpot, not including thoſe killed in the purſuit, which amounted to twenty-five thouſand more. This battle, from the beginning to the defeat, did not last more than half an hour. The event was very honourable to all Chriſtendom, as well as to the nobility and gentry; for had thoſe low-bred peaſants ſucceeded, there would have been unheard-of cruelties practiſed, to the deſtruction of all gentlemen, by the common people who had every where riſen in rebellion. Now, let us think of the Pariſians: what they will ſay, when they hear the news of the defeat of the Flemings at Roſebecque, and the death of Philip von Artaveld their

their leader? They will not be much rejoiced more than ſeveral other large towns.

When this battle was completely finiſhed, they allowed time for the purſuers to collect together, and ſounded the trumpets of retreat, for each to retire to his quarters, as was proper. The van-guard halted beyond the king's battalion, where the Flemings were quartered on the Wedneſday, and made themſelves very comfortable; for there was a ſufficiency of proviſion in the king's army, beſides the purveyances which came from Ypres. They made, the enſuing night, brilliant fires in different places, of the staves of the Flemings: whoever wiſhed for any could collect ſufficient to load his back.

When the king of France arrived at his camp, where his magnificent pavilion of red ſilk had been pitched, and when he had been diſarmed, his uncles, and many barons of France came, as was right, to attend on him. Philip von Artaveld then came into his mind, and he ſaid: 'If Philip is dead or alive, I ſhould like to ſee him.' They replied; 'they would have a ſearch made for him.' It was proclaimed through the army, that whoever ſhould diſcover the body of Philip von Artaveld, ſhould receive one hundred francs. Upon this the varlets examined the dead, who were all ſtripped, or nearly ſo, and Philip through avarice, was ſo ſtrictly ſought after, that he was found by a varlet, who had formerly ſerved him ſome time, and who knew him perfectly. He was dragged before the king's pavilion. The king looked at him for ſome time, as did the other

other lords. He was turned over and over to ſee if he had died of wounds, but they found none that could have cauſed his death. He had been ſqueezed in the crowd, and, falling into a ditch, numbers of Ghent men fell upon him, who died in his company.

When they had ſufficiently viewed him, he was taken from thence and hanged on a tree. Such was the end of Philip von Artaveld.

Sir Daniel de Haluin who, with his knights and ſquires, had held out Oudenarde ſo highly to his honour, knowing well that the king of France was in Flanders, and that there would be a battle with the Flemings, lighted, late at night on the Wedneſday preceding the battle, four torches, which he hoiſted above the walls, as a ſignal that the ſiege would be raiſed.

About midnight, on the Thurſday, news was brought to the lord of Harzelles and the others, that their army had been completely routed, and Philip von Artaveld ſlain. Upon this they inſtantly bróke up the ſiege, and marched away for Ghent, leaving behind them the greater part of their ſtores, each running as faſt as he could to Ghent. The garriſon of Oudenarde was ignorant of this retreat, and remained ſo until the morrow-morning. On being informed of it they ſallied out, and carried into Oudenarde great pillage of knives, carriages and ſtores, which they found hid.

On Thurſday evening, intelligence arrived at Bruges of the defeat of the army, and of every thing being loſt. They were more aſtoniſhed than

than ever, and ſaid among themſelves; 'Our deſtruction is now come upon us: if the Bretons ſhould advance hither and enter our town, we ſhall be pillaged and murdered, for they will ſpare none.' Upon this, the townſpeople, of both ſexes, collected their jewels and moſt precious effects, and began to embark in veſſels, to ſave themſelves by ſea, in Holland or Zealand, or wherever fortune ſhould carry them. In this manner were they employed four days: and you would not have found in all the hôtels of Bruges one ſilver ſpoon. Every thing was packed up for fear of the Bretons.

When Peter du Bois, who was confined to his bed from the wounds he had received at Commines, heard of the defeat of the army, and death of Philip von Artaveld, and how much the inhabitants of Bruges were alarmed, he did not think himſelf very ſafe, and therefore declared he would ſet out from Bruges and return to Ghent; for he thought that Ghent would be much frightened: he therefore ordered a litter for himſelf, as he could not ride.

You must know, that when the news arrived at Ghent of the great loſs of their men, the death of Philip von Artaveld, and the deſtruction of their army, they were ſo much caſt down, that if the French on the day of the battle, or even on the Friday or Saturday, had advanced to Ghent before Peter du Bois arrived there, they would have opened the gates to them, without any oppoſition, and ſubmitted to their mercy.

But

But the French did not attend to this, thinking themſelves perfectly masters ſince Philip was dead; and that the Ghent men would, of their own accord, ſurrender themſelves to the king's mercy. This meaſure, however, they did not adopt. On the contrary, they alone carried on the war with greater vigour and bitterneſs than before, as you will hear related in the continuance of this history.

On the Friday the king diſlodged from Roſebecque, on account of the ſtench of the dead: he was adviſed to advance to Courtray to refreſh himſelf. The halze* and ſome knights and ſquires who well knew the country, mounting their horſes, entered the town of Courtray full gallop; for there was not any oppoſition made. The women, both rich and poor, and many men alſo, ran into cellars and churches to ſave themſelves, ſo that it was a pitiful ſight.

Thoſe who firſt entered Courtray gained conſiderably by the pillage. The French and Bretons next came there, and lodged themſelves as they entered. The king of France made his entry the firſt day of December.

A ſtrict ſearch was now made over the town for the Flemings who had hid themſelves, and no man was admitted to mercy, for the French hated them as much as they were hated by the townſpeople, on account of a battle which had

* This name has puzzled me very much: I cannot find it in any dictionary. It is called, both in MSS. and print, Haſe, Haze, Hazale and Halze.

formerly

formerly been fought before Courtray, when the count Robert d'Artois and all the flower of the French nobility were ſlain.

The king had heard that there was in a chapel of the virgin in Courtray five hundred gilt ſpurs, which had belonged to the knights of France who had periſhed at the battle of Courtray in the year 1302, and that the inhabitants every year kept a grand ſolemnity, by way of triumph, for the ſucceſs of this battle. He declared he would make them pay for it; and, on his departure, would give up the town to fire and flame; ſo that they ſhould remember, in times to come, that the king of France had been there.

Soon after the arrival of the king and his lords at Courtray, ſir Daniel de Haluin, with fifty lances from the garriſon of Oudenarde, came thither to pay their reſpects to the king. They were very graciouſly received by him and his lords; and, after ſtaying there one day, they returned to their companions in Oudenarde.

CHAP. XLVI.

BRUGES SUBMITS TO THE KING'S MERCY.—THE COUNT DE BLOIS GUARDS THE COUNTRY OF HAINAULT FROM BEING PILLAGED.—THE INHABITANTS OF GHENT GAIN COURAGE FROM PETER DU BOIS.

THE Bretons and the van-guard ſhewed very plainly the great deſire they had to march to Bruges and to divide the ſpoil among themſelves, for they were quartered between Tourout and Bruges. The earl of Flanders, who had an affection for the town of Bruges, and who would have been ſorry for its deſtruction, had ſtrong ſuſpicions of their deſigns. He had received intelligence of what was going forward in Bruges, and how very much they were frightened. He therefore took compaſſion on them, and ſpoke to his ſon, the duke of Burgundy, remonſtrating with him, that if the town of Bruges ſhould throw itſelf on the king's mercy, it ought not to be refuſed: for, if the Bretons or others were permitted to enter it, it would be irrecoverably ruined. The duke agreed to this. Now it happened that, during the king's reſidence at Courtray, the inhabitants of Bruges, who were in great alarms and knew not whether to quit their town or wait the event, determined to ſend two friars to the king, to ſolicit a paſſ-

port

port for twelve of the principal inhabitants to wait on his majeſty and lay their caſe before him.

The monks came to Courtray and ſpoke with the king and his council, and the earl of Flanders, who ſoftened the buſineſs as much as he could. The king granted the paſſport for the twelve citizens to come and return, and ſaid he would willingly hear them.

On the return of the monks to Bruges, twelve deputies ſet out, under the paſſport they had brought, and came to the king at Courtray, where they found him accompanied by his uncles. They caſt themſelves on their knees, and entreated him to accept them for his ſubjects; that they were his men, and the town was at his mercy; but begged him, for the love of God, to have pity on them, and not ſuffer the town to be deſtroyed or pillaged; for, if it were, too many perſons would be ruined. With regard to having oppoſed their lord, they had been forced to it by Philip von Artaveld and the Ghent men; for they had always loyally acquitted themſelves to the earl.

The king heard this ſpeech through the interpretation of the earl of Flanders, who was preſent, and who on his knees entreated for them.

It was explained to the citizens of Bruges, that it would be neceſſary to ſatisfy the Bretons and men at arms who were encamped between Tourout and Bruges, and that there was no other means of doing ſo but with money.

Upon this, negotiations were entered upon

as

as to the ſum; at firſt, two hundred thouſand francs were demanded; but it was reduced at laſt to ſix ſcore thouſand francs, ſixty thouſand of which they were to pay down, and the remainder at Candlemas; for which the king aſſured them peace; but they ſurrendered themſelves ſimply as liege men to the king of France by faith and homage.

By this means was the good town of Bruges prevented from being pillaged. The Bretons were much vexed at it, for they thought to have had their ſhare; and ſome of them ſaid, when they heard peace had been made, that this war in Flanders was not worth any thing; that they had gained too little pillage, and that it did not end well for them; adding,—'But when we return home, it ſhall be through the country of Hainault; and duke Albert, who governs it, has not aſſiſted his couſin the earl of Flanders, but has acted in a double manner. It will be right that we pay him a viſit: for Hainault is a rich and plentiful country: beſides, we ſhall not find any one to obſtruct our paſſage, and we may there make amends for our loſſes and ill paid wages.'

There was a time when thoſe of this opinion amounted to twelve hundred ſpears, Bretons, Burgundians, Savoyards and others. You may ſuppoſe the charming country of Hainault was in jeopardy. The gallant count de Blois, who was one of the greateſt lords of the rear-guard, and of the king's council, heard of this intended march, and that the Bretons, Burgundians and others, who only looked for pillage, menaced

naced the fair country of Hainault; he took immediate ſteps to prevent it, ſaying, it was not to be ſuffered that ſo fine a country ſhould be overrun and pillaged.

He ſummoned to his lodgings his couſins, the count de la Marche, the count de St. Pol, the lord de Coucy, the lord d'Anghien and ſeveral more, all holding lands in Hainault, and who had come thither to ſerve the king, and remonſtrated with them, that they ought not by any means to ſuffer the good country of Hainault, whence they had ſprung, and where they had eſtates, to be pillaged in any way whatever; for, with regard to the war, Hainault had not been in the leaſt wanting, but had moſt loyally aſſiſted the king in this expedition with its barons, and, before the king came into Flanders, it had aided the earl of Flanders with its knights and ſquires, who had ſhut themſelves in Oudenarde and Dendremonde, at the riſk of their lives and fortunes.

The count de Blois exerted himſelf ſo much, and gained ſo many partiſans, that all thoſe meaſures were broken, and Hainault remained in peace. This gallant lord performed another noble ſervice. There was in Flanders a knight called the lord d'Eſquemine, who from affection to a relation of his, called Daniel Buſe, killed in Valenciennes by his own fault, had declared he would make war on and harraſs that town. He had done ſo, and threatened to inſult it ſtill more, being ſeconded by many friends inclined to evil; for it was reported that he had collected full five hundred ſpears, who would follow him

him into Hainault to attack the town of Valenciennes, in which they ſaid he was juſtified. But when the count de Blois heard of it, he went to him nobly accompanied, and ordered the knight not to dare enter Hainault, nor to conduct any men at arms into the countries of his couſin duke Albert, otherwiſe he ſhould pay dearly for it. This gallant count went further, and made the knight his particular friend, and obſequious to himſelf and the lord de Coucy; and thus was that town kept in peace. Such ſervices did the count de Blois to Hainault and Valenciennes, for which he gained great love and affection, but particularly from Valenciennes.

The lords and the men at arms ſtill remained in and about Courtray, for they knew not whether the king would march to Ghent or not. The French imagined, that when Bruges had ſurrendered itſelf to the king's mercy, Ghent would do the ſame, ſince it had loſt its leader, and ſuch numbers of men at the battle of Roſebecque. In truth, for three days, the inhabitants were well inclined ſo to do, and knew not how to act: to quit the town and leave every thing, or to ſend the keys to the king, and ſurrender themſelves to his mercy. They were ſo completely caſt down that there was neither union nor ſteadineſs among them. The lord de Harzelles, though in the town, was incapable of giving them comfort.

When Peter du Bois arrived, he found the gates open without any guards, which much ſurpriſed him; and he aſked, why they did not

better guard the town. Thoſe who came to him, and who were much rejoiced at his arrival, replied; 'Ah, ſir, what can we do? You know we have had our good captain ſlain; and, by an exact account, the town of Ghent has loſt, without counting ſtrangers, full nine thouſand men. This loſs touches us ſo nearly that we have no hopes left.'

'Ye fooliſh people,' anſwered Peter du Bois, 'are ye thus thunderſtruck when the war is not near over, nor the town of Ghent ſo famous as ſhe ſhall be? If Philip is dead, it has been by his own violence. Cloſe your gates, and think of preparing to defend yourſelves. Ye do not ſuppoſe that the king of France will come here this winter-time; and before the proper ſeaſon ſhall arrive, we ſhall have gained reinforcements from our friends in Holland, Zealand, Guelderland, Brabant and other places. We can have men enough for our money. Francis Atremen, who is now in England, will ſoon return, and he and I will be your captains. The war has never been ſo ſerious, or ſo well conducted, as we will have it. We are much better alone than joined by all Flanders; for while we had the country with us, we knew not how to make war. Let us now attend to the buſineſs ourſelves, and we ſhall perform greater exploits than have hitherto been done.'

By ſuch ſpeeches as this did Peter du Bois rally the caſt-down inhabitants of Ghent, who would, without doubt, have ſurrendered themſelves unconditionally to the king of France, if Peter du Bois had not been there. So much depends

depends upon the courage and ability of a ſingle man.

When the Ghent men ſaw five or ſix days paſs over without any attempt being made on their town, nor any appearance of a ſiege, they recovered their courage, and became more preſumptuous than before.

CHAP. XLVII.

THE TREATY BETWEEN THE ENGLISH AND FLEMINGS IS BROKEN.—THE KING OF FRANCE DEPARTS FROM FLANDERS.

YOU have before heard how ſir William Fremiton, having been ſent by the king of England and his council with letters to the principal towns in Flanders on the ſubject of the intended treaties between them, had remained at Calais, and with him Francis Atremen and the ſix citizens of Ghent. When the Flemings heard of the defeat at Roſebeoque, they were ſo much aſtoniſhed, that the Engliſh knight ſaw he had no occaſion to proceed further, for there was an end of the treaty. He therefore took his letters without having ſealed them, and returned to England as ſpeedily as he could, to relate the particulars of this event.

The nobles of England were not ſorry on hearing it; for they ſaid, that if the commonalty of Flanders had been victorious over the king of France, and his nobility had been ſlain, the pride of

of the common people would have been ſo great that all gentlemen would have had cauſe to lament it, for appearances of inſurrections had been ſhewn in England.'

The Flemings, who had been ſent to London with Francis Atremen, were much caſt down, and, haſtily embarking at Calais, ſailed to Middlebourg in Zealand. The deputies returned to their different towns, and Francis Atremen and his companions got to Ghent as well as they were able, through Zealand, but not until the king of France had left Flanders.

During the reſidence of the king of France in Courtray, many councils were held, to determine whether they ſhould lay ſiege to Ghent or not. The king was well inclined for ſo doing, as were the Bretons and Burgundians. But the lords of the council, as it was now the heart of winter, conſidered, that no effectual war could be carried on, and that the knights were much weakened and harraſſed by the cold; that, as the rivers round Ghent were wide and deep, it would be time thrown away to attempt the ſiege: beſides, the chiefs were alſo worn down by the rains, the cold, and lying on the ground, ſo that, every thing conſidered, the king was adviſed to return to Tournay, where he might recruit himſelf and keep his Chriſtmas. Thoſe from the more diſtant parts, ſuch as Auvergne, Dauphiny, Savoy and Burgundy, were to march quietly into their own countries. But the king and his council wiſhed the Bretons, Normans and French to remain with

him and the conſtable; for, as he could depend on them, he intended employing them againſt the Pariſians, who had been ſo buſy in forging armour, to make them behave better than they had hitherto done, ſince the coronation of the king.

When the king of France departed from Courtray, he was not forgetful, any more than his lords, of the gilt ſpurs which had been hung up in a church at Courtray, and which had belonged to the French nobility who had fallen with Robert d'Artois at the battle of Courtray. The king therefore ordered the town to be burnt and deſtroyed. The earl of Flanders, on hearing of this, went to the king, in hopes of remedying it, and flung himſelf on his knees, begging of him to recal his orders; but the king anſwered, he would do no ſuch thing. The earl dared not renew his requeſt, but went away to his lodgings before they were ſet on fire.

The duke of Burgundy had taken down a curious clock which ſtruck the hours, the handſomeſt that was to be ſeen on either ſide of the ſea, which he had cauſed to be packed up, and placed on carts with its bell, and carried to Dijon, where it was placed, and there ſtrikes the hours day and night.

After the king had quitted the town, it was harſhly treated; for it was burnt and deſtroyed without mercy: and many knights, ſquires, men at arms, fine children, both boys and girls, were carried away as ſlaves, to be ranſomed. The king rode on to Tournay, where he was ſhewn every reſpect

reſpect due to him, and fixed his quarters at the abbey of Saint Martin. The inhabitants were all dreſſed in white with three green bars on one ſide: and proper houſes were allotted to the lords. The king was at Saint Martins: and his attendants occupied one quarter of the town. The duke de Berry was lodged in the palace of the bishop; the duke de Bourbon at the crown; the duke of Burgundy at the Golden Head; the conſtable at St. James's Head.

Proclamation was made for none to do any damage to the good people of Tournay, under pain of death, nor take any thing without paying for it, nor to enter the country of Hainault with intent of doing miſchief. All theſe orders were obſerved. The lords refreshed themſelves there with their men; but thoſe from the diſtant parts returned to their homes through Lille, Douay and Valenciennes. The count de Blois took leave of the king and his uncles, and of his companion the count d'Eu, and retired to his inheritance in Hainault. He stopped one day and night at Valenciennes, where he was magnificently entertained; for he had gained the affection of the inhabitants, as well in gratitude for the ſervices he had rendered by preventing the Bretons, Burgundians and Savoyards, from putting their intentions into execution of overrunning the country, as in regard to ſir Thierry d'Eſquemine, who had long kept them in alarm, and who, by having put himſelf under the obedience of the count and the lord de Coucy, had given them peace.

The count de Blois left Valenciennes and went to Landrecies, where he paſſed ſome time, with the lady Mary his wife and his ſon Louis, in recovering himſelf from his fatigues. The following ſummer he went to Blois; but the counteſs and her ſon continued in Hainault, and lived the greater part of the time at Beaumont.

CHAP. XLVIII.

VAIN ATTEMPTS MADE FOR PEACE BETWEEN THE KING OF FRANCE AND GHENT.—THE KING, ON HIS RETURN TO PARIS, ORDERS THE CHAINS TO BE TAKEN AWAY THAT BARRICADED THE STREETS.—HE SEVERELY PUNISHES THE PARISIANS.

THE count de la Marche and ſir James de Bourbon, his brother, left Tournay to refreſh themſelves at their caſtle in Hainault. The lord Guy de Laval, a Breton, went to Cheure in Hainault, which is divided between ſir Robert de Namur and himſelf. The lord de Coucy ſtopped at Mortaigne on the Scheld, where he reſted himſelf and his men: but the greater part of the time he was with the king at Tournay.

The count de St. Pol was commiſſioned to correct the Urbanists of the town, which was reported to contain many. Several were diſcovered, and wherever found, even in the church of Nôtre

Nôtre Dame, they were arrested, caſt into priſon, and paid dearly for their liberty. By this means the count de St. Pol amaſſed, in a very few days ſeven thouſand francs: for none obtained their liberty without paying, or giving very good ſecurity for ſo doing.

During the king's reſidence at Tournay, the men of Ghent had a paſſport granted them to come thither and return. There were hopes they would have been pardoned; but, during the conferences which were holden, they were as proud and hardened as if they had been the conquerors at the battle of Roſebecque.

They declared, indeed, that they would willingly put themſelves under the obedience of the king, and would form part of the domain of France, under the juriſdiction of Paris; but that they would never acknowledge for their lord earl Louis, becauſe they could never love him for the great miſchiefs he had done them.

Several attempts were made to obtain a peace between the king and his council with theſe deputies; but, notwithſtanding the interference of ſome wiſe prelates, they could not get from them any other anſwer. They declared to the prelates, that if they were to live in ſuch peril as would turn the town upſide down for three or four years, they would never alter their minds. They were told they might return when they pleaſed: upon which, they departed from Tournay to Ghent, and things remained in a ſtate of war.

The king of France and his lords took great pains

pains that all Flanders ſhould become Clementiſts and obey pope Clement: but the principal towns were as ſtrongly inclined to Urban as the earl, that they could not be moved. They replied, through the earl's council, that they would conſider of it, and give a determined anſwer before Easter: the buſineſs, therefore, was held over till then.

The king of France kept his Christmas at Tournay: and, when he departed, he appointed the noble lord de Guistelles governor of Bruges, the lord de Saint Py governor of Ypres, the lord de Guistelles chief regent of Flanders, and ſir John de Jumont governor of Courtray, whither the king ſent two hundred Bretons and other men at arms, and to garriſon Ardembourg. Sir William de Laumeghien was nominated to Oudenarde with about one hundred lances for his garriſon. Thus were all the ſtrong places in Flanders provided with men at arms and ſtores, to enable them to carry on the war during the winter upon the enemy's garriſons.

Theſe things being arranged, the king ſet out from Tournay for Arras, attended by his uncles and the earl of Flanders. During the reſidence of the king at Arras, the city ran a great riſk of being pillaged by the Bretons, to whom large ſums were due for their pay, and who had fought hard in this campaign: they were much diſcontented with the king, and it was with ſome difficulty they were reſtrained. The conſtable and marſhals of France appeaſed them, by promiſing

miſing that their whole pay ſhould be completely paid them at Paris; and, with the lord Louis de Sancerre and the lord de Blainville, pledged themſelves for the performance.

Upon this the king departed, following the road to Peronne. The earl of Flanders took his leave of the king, and returned to Lille, where he reſided. The king continued his route through Peronne, Noyon, Compiegne, to Senlis, where he ſtopped. The army took up their quarters in the villages between Senlis and Meaux in Brie, and upon the river Marne and round St. Denis ſo that the whole country was filled with men at arms. The king having left Senlis for Paris, ordered his officers to make ready the Louvre, where he intended to diſmount. His three uncles did the ſame, ſending their ſervants to prepare their hôtels, as did other lords. This they were adviſed to, by way of precaution; for the king and his lords had been counſelled not to enter Paris ſuddenly, as the Pariſians were not to be depended on, but to obſerve what countenance they would ſhew, and what preparations they had made againſt the king's return. The king's officers, and the ſervants of the other lords, were ordered, if any queſtions were aſked about the king, and if he were coming, to reply, 'Yes, truly: he will be here inſtantly.'

The Pariſians, on learning this, reſolved to arm themſelves, and ſhew the king, on his entrance into Paris, the force that was in the city armed from head to foot, ready for him, if he pleaſed,

to

to diſpoſe of. It would have been better for them to have remained quiet in their houſes, for this diſplay coſt them dearly. They ſaid they had done it with good intentions, but it was taken in an oppoſite ſenſe.

The king lodged at Louvres*, and from thence went to Bourget†: it was immediately reported in Paris, that the king would be inſtantly there: upon which, upwards of twenty thouſand Pariſians armed themſelves and took the field, and drew up in a handſome battalion between St. Ladre and Paris, on the ſide of Montmartre. Their croſs-bowmen had large ſhields and mallets, and all were prepared as for inſtant combat. The king was ſtill at Bourget, with his lords, when this news was brought them, and an account of the ſtate of Paris. 'See,' ſaid the lords, 'the pride and preſumption of this mob! what are they now making this diſplay for? if they had thus come to ſerve the king when he ſet out for Flanders, they would have done well; but their heads were only ſtuffed with prayers to God, that none of us might return.' To theſe words ſome, who would have been glad to have gone further and attacked the Pariſians, added,—'if the king be well adviſed, he will not put himſelf into the hands of

* Louvres,—a town in the Iſle of France, five leagues from Senlis, ſix from Paris.

† Bourget,—a ſmall town in the Iſle of France, about a league from Paris.

ſuch

ſuch people, who meet him fully armed when they ought to have come in all humility, with a proceſsion, ringing the bells of Paris, and returning thanks to God for the grand victory he has been pleaſed to give us in Flanders.'

The lords were ſomewhat puzzled how to act: at laſt, it was determined that the conſtable of France, the lord d'Albreth, the lord de Coucy, Sir Guy de la Trimouille and Sir John de Vienne ſhould go to ſpeak with them, and demand the reaſon why they had come out of Paris in ſuch a body, armed from head to foot, to meet their king; for that ſuch a proceeding had never before been known in France. Theſe lords were prepared to anſwer, whatever might be their reply to this queſtion; for they were fully capable to manage a buſineſs, had it been of ten times the importance.

They ſet out from the king unarmed, and, to give a pretext to their miſsion, they took with them three or four heralds, whom they ordered to ride forward, ſaying; 'Go to thoſe people and demand from them a paſsport for our coming to them and our return, as we are ordered to parley with them, and tell them the king's commands.' The heralds ſticking ſpurs into their horſes, ſoon came up to the Pariſians. When the Pariſians ſaw them coming, they never thought they were ordered to ſpeak with them, but that they were going to Paris, like men who wiſhed to get there before hand.

The heralds, who had their emblazoned tabards

bards on, aſked, with a loud voice, 'Where are the chiefs? where are the chiefs? Who among you are captains? becauſe it is to them our lords have ſent us.' Theſe words made ſome of the Pariſians perceive they had acted wrong, and, bowing their heads, replied; 'There are no chiefs here: we are but one, and under the command of our lord the king. Speak, in the name of God, what you have to ſay.'

'My lords,' anſwered the heralds; 'our lords (naming them) have ſent us hither; for they cannot conceive what are your intentions; and to require that they may peaceably and without peril come hither and ſpeak with you, and return to the king with ſuch an anſwer as you ſhall give them; for otherwiſe they are afraid to come.'

'By my troth,' replied thoſe to whom this ſpeech had been addreſſed, 'there was no need to ſay this to us, unleſs it came from their noble minds; but we think you are laughing at us.' 'We have told you nothing but the truth,' ſaid the heralds. 'Well then,' replied the Pariſians, 'go and tell them they may come hither in perfect ſafety; for they ſhall have no harm from us, who are ready to obey their commands.'

The heralds returned to their lords and related what you have juſt read. The four barons then advanced, attended by the heralds, to the Pariſians, whom they found drawn up in very handſome battle-array. They were upwards of twenty thouſand. As theſe lords rode by them, examining and praiſing, in their own minds, their handſome

handſome appearance; the Pariſians bowed as they paſſed. When they were arrived in the centre, they ſtopped: and the conſtable, addreſſing them, ſaid with a loud voice, 'You people of Paris, what can have induced you thus to quit your town in ſuch array? It would ſeem that, thus drawn up, you were deſirous of combating the king, your lord, you who are his ſubjects.'

'My lord,' replied thoſe who heard him, 'under you favour we have no ſuch intentions, nor ever had. We have come out in this manner, ſince you pleaſe to know it, to diſplay to our lord the king, the force of the Pariſians, for he is very young and has never ſeen it; and, if he ſhould not be made acquainted with it, he can never know what ſervice he may draw from us ſhould there be occaſion.'

'Well, gentlemen,' anſwered the conſtable, 'you ſpeak fairly: but we tell you from the king, that at this time he does not wiſh to ſee it, and what you have done has been ſufficient for him. Return therefore, inſtantly to Paris, each man to his own houſe, and lay aſide your arms, if you wiſh the king ſhould come thither.' 'My lord,' replied the Pariſians, 'we will cheerfully obey your orders.'

The Pariſians upon this marched back to Paris, and each went to his houſe to diſarm himſelf. The four barons returned to the king, and reported to him and his council the words you have heard. It was then ordered that the king and his uncles, with the principal lords, ſhould enter

Paris

Paris with ſome men at arms, but that the main body ſhould remain near the city, to keep the Pariſians in awe.

The lord de Coucy and the marſhal de Sancerre were ordered to take the gates off the hinges from the principal gates of St. Denis and St. Marcel immediately on the king's entrance into Paris, ſo that the gates might be open day and night for the men at arms to enter the more eaſily, and maſter the Pariſians ſhould there be any neceſsity for it. They alſo commanded the chains which were thrown acroſs the ſtreets to be taken away, that the cavalry might paſs through the ſtreets without danger or oppoſition. Theſe orders were punctually obeyed.

The king made his entrance into Paris and lodged at the Louvre, and his uncles with him: the other lords went to their own hôtels, at leaſt thoſe who poſſeſſed any. The gates were taken off the hinges, and the beams which had been laid under the tower of the gates, with the chains from the ſtreets were carried to the palace.

The Pariſians, ſeeing this, were in great alarm, and ſo fearful of being punished that none dared to venture out of doors, nor to open a window; they remained in this ſituation for three days: in great fright leſt they ſhould receive more harm than they had done. It coſt them ſeveral large ſums, for thoſe whom they wiſhed to mark, were ſent for one at a time, to the council chamber, where they were fined; ſome ſix thouſand, others three, others one; ſo that they exacted from the

city

city of Paris, to the profit of the king, his uncles and miniſters, the ſum of four hundred thouſand francs. They never aſked any but the principal perſons as to their means of payment, who thought themſelves happy to eſcape with only a fine. They were ordered to carry their armour in bags, each man his own, to the caſtle of Beauté, which is now called the caſtle of Vincennes, where they were thrown into the great tower, with the mallets.

In this manner were the Pariſians puniſhed, as an example to the other towns of the kingdom of France. In addition, they were taxed with ſubſidies, aides, gabelles, fouages, with the twelfth and thirteenth penny, and many other vexations. The flat country was alſo completely ranſacked.

CHAP. XLIX.

SEVERAL OF THE PRINCIPAL CITIZENS OF PARIS ARE BEHEADED WITH JOHN DES MARETS, AND MANY OTHERS IN THE DIFFERENT TOWNS AND CITIES IN FRANCE.

THE king and his council arreſted and threw into priſon whatever perſons they pleaſed. Many were drowned; but, in order to calm the fears of the others, proclamation was made in the king's name in all the ſtreets and ſquares of Paris, that no one, under pain of death, ſhould hurt the inhabitants, nor pillage their houſes.

This

This proclamation greatly appeaſed the Pariſians. There were, however, carried to execution ſeveral of the inhabitants who had been condemned to death for having ſtirred up the people: but it was with great aſtoniſhment John des Marêts* was ſeen among the number; he was conſidered as a wiſe and upright man; and ſome ſay he was condemned unjuſtly, for he was always known to have acted with the utmoſt prudence, and was above all one of the greateſt and wiſeſt members of the courts of law. He had ſerved king Philip, king John and king Charles, with ſo much credit that no fault was found in him: nevertheleſs, he was condemned to be beheaded, with twelve others in his company.

As they were conducting him to his execution, ſeated in a cart high above the others, he called out, 'Where are thoſe who have condemned me? Let them come forth, and juſtify, if they can, the cauſe and reaſon why and wherefore they have judged me guilty of death.' He then harangued the people, and thoſe who were to ſuffer with him, which made all pity him, but they dared not ſpeak out.

He was carried to the market-place in front of the town-houſe, where all who accompanied him were beheaded before his eyes: in the number

* John des Marêts was an upright man, a diſtinguiſhed magiſtrate and avocat general. He ſuffered from the hatred of the dukes of Berry and Burgundy, which was moſt inveterate towards him.

was

was Nicholas Flamand, a draper, for whoſe life forty thouſand francs had been offered in vain. When the executioner came to behead John des Marêts, he ſaid to him, 'Maſter John, beg for mercy of the king, that he may pardon you your crimes.' Upon which he turned, and ſaid, 'I have ſerved his great grandfather king Philip, king John, and king Charles his father, faithfully and loyally; and never did theſe three kings find fault with me, nor would this king have done ſo, if he had arrived at the wiſdom and age of manhood. I firmly believe, that in my condemnation, he is not any ways culpable. I have not, therefore, any cauſe to beg his mercy; but from God alone ſhall I beg it, and that he would forgive all my ſins.'

Upon this he took leave of all the people, who, for the greater part, were in tears; and thus died Maſter John des Marêts.

In like manner were ſeveral executed in the city of Rouen, and many fined, in order to intimidate the people. At Rheims, Châlons, Troyes, Sens and Orleans, ſimilar ſcenes paſſed. The towns were heavily fined becauſe they had been diſobedient at the commencement of this reign. Immenſe ſums were thus raiſed throughout the kingdom, and all went to the dukes of Berry and Burgundy, for the king was under their management. However, to ſay the truth, the conſtable and marſhals had great part of it to pay the men at arms who had ſerved in the expedition to Flanders. The lords and great barons of France, ſuch as the count de Blois, the count de la Marche,

the

the count d'Eu, the count de St. Pol, the count de Harcourt, the count dauphin of Auvergne, the lord de Coucy and others, had granted to them aſſignments on the royal domain, to raiſe as much as the king owed them for their ſervices in Flanders, and to pay their men. I know not how theſe lords were paid their aſſignments, for very ſhortly new taxes were impoſed on theſe lands by orders from the king. Moſt commonly the king's tax was inſiſted on being paid firſt, and the lords were obliged to wait for their arrears.

CHAP. L.

THE GHENT MEN RENEW THE WAR.—THE EARL OF FLANDERS BECOMES AN OBJECT OF HATRED TO THE ENGLISH.

YOU know that when the king of France departed from Courtray, the town of Ghent was ſtill in a ſtate of war. The governors of it at this time were Peter du Bois, Peter le Nuitre and Francis Atremen, who reinforced their army with ſoldiers who came from different countries, and were not in the leaſt diſmayed with their ſituation, but as freſh and vigorous as ever. Theſe captains heard that there was a garriſon of Bretons and Burgundians in the town of Ardembourg, and therefore determined to pay them a viſit. Accordingly

Francis

Francis Atrémen marched from Ghent with three thouſand men, and arrived at Ardembourg, where there was a ſevere ſkirmiſh. In fact, the Ghent men won the town; but it coſt them a number of men, as there were full two hundred of their ſoldiers killed. The town was ſtormed, pillaged, and the greater part of it burnt. They then marched back to Ghent with their booty, where they were received with great joy. Shortly after this they advanced to Dendremonde, Aloſt, and as far as Oudenarde, plundering the whole country.

The earl of Flanders, who reſided at Lille, heard how the Ghent men were ravaging the country, and marching to different parts to plunder it. He was much enraged thereat, not ſuppoſing they would have had either the courage or power ſo to do, ſince they had loſt Philip von Artaveld. Thoſe preſent anſwered, 'My lord, you have always heard how very artful the men of Ghent are: they have ſhewn it to you, and will now do ſo the more ſince their ambaſſadors are returned from England, eſpecially Francis Atremen, who was the intimate friend of Philip: and as long as he lives, you will never be free from war. We alſo know for a truth that he has concluded a treaty between Ghent and the king of England; for he is ſecretly, in ſpite of appearances, attached to England, and receives daily from thence one franc as wages. John Saplemon, who lives at Bruges, and has reſided there under you for twenty-four years, pays him monthly. To corroborate the truth of his connections with Eng-

land, Raſſe de Voirie, Louis de Voz and John Sercolat, who are from Ghent, and the clerk who ſolicits the Biſhoprick, have remained behind in England to complete the treaties. In the month of May, you will hear more of all this than we now have told you.'

The earl of Flanders pondered on what he had heard, and believed the fact was ſo. He turned his attention to John Saplemon and the Engliſh at Bruges, and ordered his ſerjeants to ſummon them to appear on a certain day before him. The ſerjeants ordered John Sapleman and ſeveral other rich Engliſhmen, who were quite unprepared for ſuch a proceeding, to appear that day fortnight before the earl, in the caſtle of Lille.

The Engliſh were much aſtoniſhed at the ſummons, and conſulted together. They could not imagine for what cauſe the earl had thus ſummoned them. Having weighed every circumſtance they began to have their ſuſpicions, for they knew the earl was very haſty in his anger. They ſaid among themſelves; 'He who is not careful of his own perſon, is careful of nothing. I ſuſpect the earl has had ſome intelligence concerning us; for with Francis Atremen, who has a penſion from our king, there are two citizens of this town in England, who, having turned to his party, may perhaps have given information againſt us, and placed us in his ill graces.'

This idea ſtruck them all, and made them afraid to wait the day of ſummons, and to appear at Lille. They ſet out from Bruges for Sluys, where, by great exertions, they purchaſed

ed a veſſel that was ready to ſail, and having embarked, weighed anchor, and arrived at the quays of London. When the earl of Flanders heard of this, and ſaw that the Engliſh did not come according to his ſummons, he was much vexed. He found, from appearances, that what he had been told was the truth. He inſtantly ſent his ſerjeants to Bruges, and cauſed to be ſeized whatever could be found belonging to thoſe Engliſh who had fled, ſelling the articles collected; and John Saplemon of London and his companions were baniſhed Flanders for one hundred years and a day. Thoſe who had been arreſted were thrown into the dungeon of the priſon, which coſt ſome of them their lives, whilſt others recovered all they had loſt.

There is a common and true ſaying, that envy never dies. This come to my remembrance, becauſe the Engliſh are too envious of another's good fortune, and have always been ſo. You muſt know, that the king of England, his uncles, and the nobility, were much vexed at the good ſucceſs and great honour which the king of France and his nobles had gained at the battle of Roſebecque. When the Engliſh knights converſed together on the ſubject, they ſaid; 'Ha, by holy Mary! how proud will the French be now, for the heap of peaſants they have ſlain. I wiſh to God, Phillip von Artaveld had had two thouſand of our lances and ſix thouſand archers: not one Frenchman would have eſcaped death or impriſonment. By God, they ſhall not long keep this honour, for we have now a fine opportunity

of entering Flanders. That country has been conquered by the king of France, and we will conquer it for the king of England. The earl of Flanders ſhews at this moment how completely he is ſubject to France, and how much he wiſhes, in every reſpect, to pleaſe her, by baniſhing from Bruges and Flanders our Engliſh merchants, who have reſided there upwards of thirty years. The time has been when he would not have ſo done for any conſideration, but at preſent he dares not act otherwiſe for fear of the French.'

This, and ſuch like ſpeeches, were common in England; and it was publicly ſaid, that things ſhould not remain as they were: now, one may fairly ſuppoſe, that envy was the original cauſe of it.

CHAP. LI.

POPE URBAN SENDS BULLS INTO ENGLAND FOR THE DESTRUCTION OF THE CLEMENTISTS.—THE BISHOP OF NORWICH APPOINTED COMMANDER IN CHIEF AGAINST THEM.

ABOUT this period he who ſigned himſelf pope Urban the ſixth, came from Rome to Genoa by ſea, where he was grandly received, and he fixed his ſeat there. You have heard how all England was obedient to him, both church and commonalty, and now more than ever.

Becauſe

Becauſe the king of France and that nation were Clementiſts, Urban, (whom the Engliſh and ſeveral other countries obeyed) during his reſidence at Genoa, ſought how he could obtain ſuccours from England to annoy the king of France; and I will tell you by what means. He was to ſend his bulls to the archbiſhops and biſhops of the country, to proclaim that he abſolved, and would abſolve, from all crime or fault, every one who would aſſiſt in the deſtruction of the Clementiſts. He had heard that his adverſary Clement had reſorted to this means in France, and was daily doing ſo; and that the French called the Urbaniſts, as to matters of faith, dogs, which thoſe retorted back on the Clementiſts, whom Urban was very deſirous of condemning to the utmoſt of his power, and he knew he had no other means of hurting them but through the Engliſh. It was neceſſary, however, that he ſhould have a conſiderable ſum of ready money, if he wiſhed to put his plans into execution; for it was well known that the nobles of England would not, for all the abſolutions in the world, undertake any expeditions, unleſs ſuch were preceded by offers of money. Men at arms cannot live on pardons, nor do they pay much attention to them except at the point of death. He therefore determined, that with the bulls he ſent to England for the prelates to preach upon, he would order a full tenth to be raiſed by the church, and to be paid by them to the nobility, without affecting the king's treaſury, nor oppreſſing the common people.

This

This, he imagined, would be agreeable to the knights and barons of England.

He inſtantly haſtened the writing and engroſsing his bulls, as well to the king as to his uncles and the prelates of England, with his pardons and abſolutions from all crimes; he granted beſides, to the king and his uncles, a full tenth to be by them raiſed and levied throughout the kingdom, on which he enlarged very much. And becauſe all theſe ſums were to come from the church, he would have a churchman command the expedition. The lord Henry Spenſer, biſhop of Norwich, was appointed, that the commonalty and churches of England might have greater faith in it.

In addition to this, becauſe he knew that the king of Spain was contrary to his intereſt, and much allied with the king of France, he declared, that with the money that ſhould be thus raiſed in England, the duke of Lancaſter, who, in right of his wife, called himſelf king of Caſtille, ſhould ſet out for that country to raiſe a ſimilar army there: and, if the duke of Lancaſter would undertake this expedition with a powerful force of men at arms, he would grant to the king of Portugal (who had juſt commenced a war againſt don John king of Caſtille) a full tenth on the whole kingdom of Portugal.

In this manner was Urban active in his own concerns. He ſent upwards of thirty bulls to England, where they were received with much joy. The prelates preached up in their dioceſes this expedition in the manner of a croiſade; and

and the people of England, who are credulous enough, believed it too readily, ſo that none of either ſex thought they ſhould end the year happily, nor have any chance of entering paradiſe, if they did not give handſomely to the expedition as pure alms. At London, and in that dioceſe, there was collected a large Gaſcony tun full of money, and he who have gave moſt, according to the pope's bull, gained the greateſt number of pardons. All who ſhould die at this time, and who had given their money, were abſolved from every fault; and, by the tenor of the bull, happy were they who could now die, in order to obtain ſo noble an abſolution. They collected, during the winter and enſuing Lent, throughout England, as well by alms as by the tenth from the church, for every thing was received, and they ſo cheerfully taxed themſelves that the ſum of twenty-five hundred thouſand francs was amaſſed.

CHAP. LII.

THE BISHOP OF NORWICH, COMMANDER OF THE ENGLISH IN THE CROISADE OF URBAN AGAINST THE CLEMENTISTS, DISEMBARKS AT CALAIS WITH HIS ARMY OF URBANISTS.

WHEN the king of England, his uncles and council were informed of the amount of the

the above ſum, they were greatly rejoiced, and ſaid they had money ſufficient to carry on a war againſt the two kingdoms of France and Spain.

Thomas, biſhop of London, and brother to the earl of Devonſhire, was nominated to accompany the duke of Lancaſter to Spain, in the name of the pope and prelates of England. They were to have two thouſand lances and four thouſand archers, and one half of the money which had been raiſed; but they were not to leave England ſo ſoon as the army under the command of the biſhop of Norwich, becauſe this laſt was to march to Calais and enter France. They were uncertain how far in that country they could advance, and whether the king of France would meet them in force to give them battle.

There was another circumſtance adverſe to the duke of Lancaſter, who had great expectations from his intended expedition: the common people of England inclined in general to follow the biſhop of Norwich in preference to him: for a conſiderable time he had not been popular with them: beſides, France was much nearer than Spain. Some ſaid privately, that the duke of Lancaſter, more through avarice and a deſire to partake of the large ſums which had been collected from the church and from the alms of good men than through devotion, had planned this expedition; but that the biſhop of Norwich repreſented the pope, and had been appointed by him to the command, for which reaſon the

greater

greater part, of the people, as well as the king, had greater faith in him.

There were in the pay of the church, and under the command of this biſhop of Norwich, ſeveral good knights of England and Gaſcony, ſuch as the lord de Beaumont, ſir Hugh Calverley, ſir Thomas Trivet, ſir William Helmon, ſir John Ferrers, ſir Hugh Spenſer nephew of the biſhop, being his brother's ſon, ſir William Fermiton, ſir Matthew Redman, governor of Berwick, the lord de Châteauneuf, and his brother ſir John de Châteauneuf, Raymond Maſſon, William de Pau, Gariot Vighier, John de Cachitan, with many others: in the whole, about five hundred lances and fifteen hundred other men; but there were multitudes of prieſts, becauſe it was an affair of the church and had been ſet on foot by the pope.

The men at arms were punctual in laying in their ſtores, and the king gave them a paſſage from Dover and Sandwich. Their purveyances were at thoſe places about Eaſter; and all who were deſirous of going on this expedition, which was a ſort of croiſade, marched thither in ſmall bodies.

Before the biſhop and the captains embarked, but particularly ſir Hugh Calverley, ſir Thomas Trivet and ſir William Helmon, they were ſummoned to attend the king's council, where they ſolemnly ſwore, in the preſence of the king, to fulfil the object of the expedition, and that they would never make war on, or harraſs any country or men who acknowledged pope Urban,

but

but only thoſe who were under the obedience of Clement.

After they had taken this oath, the king, by advice of his council, addreſſed them, ſaying, —'Biſhop, and you, Thomas and William, when you ſhall have arrived at Calais, you will remain there for a month or thereabouts, in which time I will ſend you a good marſhal and valiant man, ſir William Beauchamp; for I have diſpatched meſſengers to him on the borders of Scotland, where he at preſent is holding conferences on our part with the Scots, for the truce between us and Scotland will expire on St. John's day. On his return, you ſhall have him without fail in your company: therefore wait for him, for he will be of great uſe to you by his good ſenſe and advice.'

The Biſhop of Norwich and the above-named knights aſſented to this propoſal, and quitted the king: they went to Dover, where they embarked, and arrived at Calais the 23d of April, 1383. Sir John Delvernes was at that time governor of Calais, who received the biſhop and his companions with much pleaſure. They diſembarked, a few at a time, with their horſes and armour; and thoſe who had the opportunity of doing ſo, lodged themſelves in the town, the reſt abided in huts which they erected in the neighbourhood, and continued thus until the 4th day of May, expecting their marſhal, ſir William Beauchamp, who, however, did not arrive.

The biſhop of Norwich, young and eager, and

and wiſhing to bear arms, having never done ſo but in Lombardy with his brother, finding himſelf at Calais, and at the head of ſo fine a body of men at arms, ſaid to his companions, 'For what purpoſe, my good ſirs, are we thus waiting here ſo long? Sir William Beauchamp will never arrive, and the king and his uncles have totally forgotten us. Let us perform ſome deeds of arms, ſince we have been ordered ſo to do, and loyally employ the money of the church, ſince we are living upon it, and make conqueſts on our enemies.'

'It is well ſpoken,' replied thoſe who heard him. 'Give notice to our men, that in three days we ſhall make an excurſion, and let us determine to what part we ſhall march. We cannot iſſue out of the gates of Calais without entering an enemy's country: for France ſurrounds us on all ſides, as well towards Flanders as towards Boulogne and St. Omer: Flanders is now a conquered country, by the power of the king of France. Conſidering all things, we cannot do a more honourable exploit than to reconquer it; for the earl of Flanders has done great injuſtice to our countrymen, whom, without any apparent reaſon, he has baniſhed from Bruges and Flanders. Two years ago, he would not willingly have done ſo; but at this moment he muſt obey the orders and good pleaſure of the king of France.' 'On which account,' ſaid the biſhop of Norwich, 'if I may be believed, the firſt expedition we undertake ſhould be to Flanders.'

'You

'You shall be believed heartily,' replied sir Thomas Trivet and sir William Helmon: 'give orders for this, and let us march thither in three days, for it will be on enemy's ground.'

This was adopted by all in the council, and they gave notice of it to the reſt of the army.

CHAP. LIII.

THE BISHOP OF NORWICH, COMMANDER OF THE URBANISTS, ENTERS FLANDERS CONTRARY TO THE OPINION OF SIR HUGH CALVERLEY.—THE EARL OF FLANDERS SENDS AMBASSADORS TO THE BISHOP, WHO RETURNS A HARSH ANSWER.

SIR Hugh Calverley was not preſent at this council, having gone to ſee a couſin called ſir John Droicton*, who was governor of Guines, and had remained there all that day, intending to return on the following, which he did. The bishop ſent for him to the caſtle, where he was lodged, as were the others, becauſe ſir Hugh had been longer accuſtomed to arms and had ſeen more than they had done. The knights had told the bishop that they wished to have ſir Hugh's opinion before they undertook any thing. The bishop related to ſir Hugh, in their preſence, the converſation which had paſſed, and demanded his advice on it. Sir Hugh thus replied to the

* Droicton. Q. Drayton.

bishop

bishop; 'Sir, you know on what terms we have left England: our expedition has nothing to do with what concerns the wars of kings, but is ſolely pointed againſt the Clementiſts. We are the ſoldiers of pope Urban, who has given us abſolution from all faults if we deſtroy the Clementiſts. Should we march into Flanders, notwithſtanding that country may now appertain to the king of France and duke of Burgundy, we ſhall forfeit our engagement; for I underſtand, that the earl of Flanders and all the Flemings are as good Urbaniſts as ourſelves; beſides, we have not a ſufficient army to enter Flanders, for they are prepared and accuſtomed to war, having had nothing elſe to do for theſe laſt four years. They are a numerous people, and it will be difficult to march through ſo ſtrong a country. But if you be determined on an expedition, let us march into France, there we ſhall find our enemies. The king, our lord, is now at open war with them, and the French are all Clementiſts, holding a contrary faith to us and to our pope. We ought to wait for our marſhal ſir William Beauchamp, who cannot fail to arrive ſoon with large reinforcements; and the laſt word the king ſaid to us was, that he would ſend him. I therefore adviſe, ſince you are reſolved on an expedition, that we march towards Aire or Montrieul: none will venture, as yet, to oppoſe us, and we ſhall add to our numbers by the Flemings who, having loſt their all, will come and join us in the hopes of gain. They have ſtill rankling in their minds the misfortunes the

French

French brought on them by the ſlaughter of their fathers, ſons and friends in their wars.'

Scarcely had ſir Hugh done ſpeaking, when the biſhop, in a rage, hot and impetuous as he was, replied; 'Yes, yes, ſir Hugh: you have learnt ſo long to fight in France, that you know not how to fight elſewhere. Now, can we any where make an excurſion with more advantage to ourſelves than towards the ſea, by Bourbourg, Dunkirk, Nieuport, and thence to the dependencies of Caſſel, Bergues, Ypres and Poperingue. In the country I have named, according to the informations I have received from citizens of Ghent who are with us, they have never been harraſſed by the war; we will therefore go thither to refreſh ourſelves, and wait for the arrival of ſir William Beauchamp, if he intend coming, but as yet we have not had any intelligence of him.'

Sir Hugh Calverley, ſeeing himſelf thus rebuffed by the biſhop, who was of high birth and his commander, notwithſtanding he was a valiant knight, made no reply, and the rather becauſe he had not any ſupport from ſir Thomas Trivet, nor from ſir William Helmon: he therefore left the place, ſaying; 'By God, ſir, if you make an excurſion, ſir Hugh Calverley will accompany you, and you ſhall take neither road nor march but he will be of the party.'

'I willingly believe,' ſaid the biſhop, 'that you have a great deſire for an excurſion: therefore make yourſelf ready, for we ſhall march in the morning.' In this reſolution they agreed, and

and then ſeparated. Orders were ſent to all the quarters in and round Calais, that every one might be prepared for the expedition in the morning. When morning came, the trumpet ſounded, and all marched off, taking the road towards Gravelines. They were, according to a muſter made, three thouſand armed heads. They continued their march until they came to the port of Gravelines; but it was at the time of ebb, they therefore paſſed by the port, and attacked and pillaged a monaſtery which the townſmen had fortified. The town could not hold out long, for it was only incloſed by paliſadoes, and the inhabitants were ſeamen. If there had been any gentlemen in the town it would have held out longer than it did. Neither had the country any notice of this war, nor did they any way ſuſpect the Engliſh of thus attacking them. The Engliſh therefore conquered the town of Gravelines by ſtorm; and, having ended it, advanced towards the monaſtery, whither theſe good people had retreated, carrying with them their wives, children and fortunes, which they placed therein, depending on the ſtrength of the walls. They had made deep ditches all round this ſtrong place, ſo that the Engliſh could not immediately win it, but remained two days in the town before they took it. In the end, they conquered, and ſlew thoſe who defended it, doing with the remainder according to their pleaſure.

Thus were they lords and maſters of Gravelines, where the whole army was quartered, and found

found plenty of proviſion. The country began to take alarm on hearing the Engliſh were in poſſeſſion of Gravelines; and thoſe of the low countries ſheltered themſelves in the fortreſſes, ſending their wives and children to Bergues, Bourbourg and St. Omer.

The earl of Flanders heard at Lille, where he reſided, that the Engliſh had made war on his country, and had taken Gravelines. He began to have ſuſpicions of them, as well as of Bruges and its dependencies. Summoning his council, he ſaid to them; 'I am very much aſtoniſhed that the Engliſh ſhould overrun my country, and take my towns without giving me any notice of it; and that, without ſending me any defiance, they ſhould have entered my territories.' 'Indeed, my lord,' ſome of them replied, 'you have cauſe to wonder; but one may ſuppoſe they conſider Flanders as belonging to France, ſince the king had advanced ſo far into it that the country ſurrendered to him.' 'Well, what had we beſt do?' aſked the earl. 'It will be right,' replied his council; 'that Sir John de Villain, and ſir John du Moulin, who are here, and have penſions from the king of England, ſhould go in your name to England to ſpeak with the king, and report to him a detail of this affair, and demand, in your name, for what purpoſe he thus makes war on you. I believe, that when he ſhall have heard your ambaſſadors, he will be angered at thoſe who have thus harraſſed your country, and recal them thence with much blame.'

'This is very well,' ſaid the earl, 'but during the

the time our knights are going to England, thoſe at Gravelines (and who will ſtop them?) may do great damage to the inhabitants of the Franconate.' The earl was thus anſwered; 'It is neceſſary ſome parley ſhould be held with them, as well to obtain paſſports for Calais and England as to know what it is they want; and ſir John Villain and ſir John du Moulin are ſuch diſcreet perſons, that they will manage to reſtore peace to the country.' 'I conſent to this,' replied the earl.

The two knights received their inſtructions from the earl and his council, in regard to the parley with the biſhop of Norwich as well as reſpecting their miſſion and what they were to ſay to the king of England and his uncles. Whilſt theſe knights were preparing to ſet out for Gravelines to the biſhop of Norwich, all the country roſe in the environs of Bourbourg, Bergues, Caſſel, Poperingue, Furnes, Nieuport and other towns, and advancing to Dunkirk, entered that town, declaring that they would in a ſhort time march out to guard the frontiers and fight the Engliſh. Theſe Flemings had for leader a knight called ſir John Sporequin, who was governor or regent of the territories of madame de Bar, which are ſituated on this frontier and extend to the gates of Ypres.

Sir John Sporequin was ignorant of the earl's intentions of ſending to England: the haze de Flandres had come to him with thirty lances, and ſaid that the earl was at Lille; but that he knew nothing more; and that he was about to marry his ſiſter there with the lord Delbauurin.

These two knights took great pains to stir up the country and to collect all men of courage: they amounted at last to twelve thousand men, armed with pikes, staves, coats of mail, jackets, iron caps and helmets, and all of them were, for the greater part, as I was informed, vassals of madame de Bar residing between Gravelines and Dunkirk.

Three leagues off, and near the road, is Mardyke, a large village quite open on the seashore, whither the English advanced; and at times there were skirmishes.

Sir John Villain and sir John du Moulin arrived at Gravelines with a passport, for which they had waited at Bourbourg, where one of their heralds brought it. On their arrival at Gravelines, and soon after they had dismounted, they waited on the bishop of Norwich, who outwardly gave them a handsome reception and good entertainment. He had that day at dinner all the barons of his army; for he well knew that the knights of the earl of Flanders were coming, and therefore wished they might meet with them all together.

The knights opened their business, and said to the bishop,—'Sir, we are sent hither by my lord of Flanders.' 'What lord?' said the bishop.

'The earl of Flanders, sir: Flanders has no other lord.'

'By my God,' replied the bishop, 'we consider it as belonging to the king of France or to the duke of Burgundy, our enemies, for by force of arms have they just conquered it.'

'Under respect to your grace,' answered the knights,

knights, 'the territory was loyally remitted at Tournay into the hands and government of my lord the earl of Flanders, who has ſent us hither to entreat of you to grant us, who are attached by faith and penſion to the king of England your lord, paſſports to go to England, to the king, to know his reaſons for making war on my lord the earl of Flanders and his country without ſending him any defiance.'

The biſhop replied, he would conſider of it, and they ſhould have his anſwer to-morrow morning. They could not obtain more at this moment, and retired to their houſes, leaving the Engliſh in council, who reſolved as I ſhall tell you.

Having fully weighed every circumſtance, and the enterpriſe they had undertaken, they reſolved not to grant paſſports to the two knights to go to England, for the journey was long, and, while they were going and returning, the whole country would be ſecured and greatly ſtrengthened; for the earl, who was a ſubtle character, might inform the king of France and duke of Burgundy of his ſituation, by whoſe means ſo large a force might in a few days come upon them, that they would be unable to reſiſt it. Having formed this reſolution as to the anſwer they would give in the morning to the knights from Flanders, ſir Hugh Calverley was called upon for his opinion, who ſaid to the biſhop; 'Sir, you are our commander: you will tell them that we are on the territories of the ducheſs of Bar, who is a Clementiſt; that you make war for Urban and no one elſe;

and that if the people of this country, with the churches and monaſteries, will be good Urbaniſts, and march with you through the country, your men ſhall peaceably paſs, paying for whatever they may want: but in reſpect to granting them paſſports to go to England, you will do no ſuch thing; for our war does not regard either the king of France, or the king of England, but ſolely pope Urban, whoſe ſoldiers we are. It ſeems to me that ſuch an anſwer ought to ſatisfy them.'

All preſent aſſented to it, and particularly the biſhop, who had no other care, whatever might be ſaid or done, but to fight and carry on the war. Thus was this buſineſs arranged for the night. On the morrow after maſs, the two knights, deſirous of having their anſwer, went to the lodgings of the biſhop, and waited until he came out to hear maſs, when they placed themſelves before him. Outwardly he ſeemed glad to ſee them, and converſed with them on different topics to delay the time until his knights ſhould come. On their arrival, the biſhop ſaid, 'My fair gentlemen, you are come for an anſwer, and you ſhall have one. With regard to the requeſt you made to us from the earl of Flanders, I inform you, you may return when you pleaſe to the earl; but as to Calais or England, you will go at your perils, for I will not give you any paſſport. I am not king of England, nor commiſſioned to do ſo. I am the ſoldier of pope Urban, and all thoſe who are with me are ſo likewiſe, having taken his money to

ſerve

ſerve him. We are at this moment on the territories of the ducheſs of Bar, who is a Clementiſt. If the people of this country hold that opinion, we make war on them. If they will follow us, they ſhall have their ſhare of the abſolutions; for Urban, who is our pope, and for whom we march, abſolves from all crimes thoſe who ſhall aid in the deſtruction of the Clementiſts.

When the two knights heard this ſpeech, ſir John Villain ſaid; 'Sir, with reſpect to what concerns the pope, I believe you have never heard but that my lord of Flanders is a good Urbaniſt, you have therefore been badly adviſed if you make war on him or on his country: and I do not believe that the king of England has given you ſuch extenſive orders; for if ſuch had been his intentions, he is ſo noble and conſiderate, he would firſt have ſent him a defiance.'

This anſwer enraged the biſhop, who ſaid; 'Go and tell your earl, he ſhall not have any other anſwer. And if he wiſhes to ſend you or any others to England, to learn more particularly the king's intentions, let him look to it; for thoſe he ſends muſt take another road than this, and they ſhall not croſs at Calais.'

When the knights found they could not have any other anſwer, they took their leave and departed. They returned to their lodgings to dinner; and then, mounting their horſes, went that day to St. Omer.

CHAP.

CHAP. LIV.

THE BISHOP OF NORWICH MARCHES TOWARDS DUNKIRK.—HE DEFEATS TWELVE THOUSAND FLEMINGS AND TAKES THE TOWN.

THE ſame day that the knights of Flanders had departed, news was brought to the biſhop and the Engliſh, that there were at Dunkirk and in its neighbourhood, upwards of twelve thouſand men armed, and that the baſtard of Flanders commanded them, but that there were other knights and ſquires who alſo adviſed them. That they had ſkirmiſhed with their men at Mardyke, and had repulſed and killed one hundred.

The biſhop ſaid; 'Now obſerve the conduct of the earl of Flanders: he affects to do nothing, and yet he is at the bottom of all: he wants to negotiate ſword in hand. I am reſolved to march to-morrow towards Dunkirk, and ſee what ſort of men theſe are.'

This propoſal met univerſal approbation, and notice was ſent of it through Gravelines. This day two knights joined the army, one from Calais, the other from Guines, with about thirty lances and ſixty archers. Theſe knights were called ſir Nicholas Cliton* and ſir John Dracton†, governor of Guines.

* Cliton. Q. if not Clinton. † Dracton. Q. if not Drayton.

On

On the enſuing morning, every one was ready for the march. They took the field, amounting in number to more than ſix hundred lances and fifteen hundred archers. They advanced towards Mardyke and Dunkirk; and the biſhop of Norwich had the arms of the church borne before him, the banner of St. Peter, gules with two keys en ſautoir, as being gonfalonnier of pope Urban. His pennon had his own arms, which were argent quartered with azure, with a fret or, on a field azure, and a baton gules on a field argent; and, becauſe he was a younger brother of the Deſpenſers, his arms were charged with a bordure gules. Sir Hugh Deſpenſer, his nephew, was there with his pennon, and the lord de Beaumont, ſir Thomas Trivet, ſir William Helmon and ſir Hugh Calverley, had both banner and pennon. Sir William Drayton, ſir John Drayton, his brother, ſir Matthew d'Adremon, ſir John Ferrers, ſir William Frenenton*, and ſir John de Neufchaſtel, Gaſcon, had only pennons.

Theſe men at arms came to Mardyke, where they refreſhed themſelves, and, having drank a cup, continued their march towards Dunkirk. The Flemings who were in the town heard that the Engliſh were marching in order of battle to combat them. Upon this, they reſolved to take the field, and draw up in battle-array to defend themſelves if there ſhould be any occaſion, for it would not be for their advantage to ſhut them-

* Frenenton. Q. Farringdon, or Frampton.

ſelves

ſelves up in the town. They inſtantly executed this reſolution, and all who were in Dunkirk armed and marched into the fields, where they drew up in good array on a hill, and muſtered upwards of twelve thouſand men.

The Engliſh were now advanced near to Dunkirk, when, on looking towards the riſing grounds on the right, in the direction of Bourbourg, and near the ſea-ſhore, they ſaw the Flemings formed in a large and well-arranged battalion. On this they halted, for they thought, from the manner in which the Flemings had drawn themſelves up, that they had an intention of fighting. The principal captains aſſembled to conſider how they ſhould now act, and many words paſſed, for ſome, and eſpecially the biſhop, wiſhed to march inſtantly to the combat; but others, ſuch as the lord de Beaumont and ſir Hugh Calverley were of a contrary opinion, and aſſigned as their reaſon, that the Flemings had never done them any wrong; and that, in truth, they had never ſent any declaration of war to the earl of Flanders, though they had entered his country. 'We do not make war in a gallant manner, but like a mob, that whoever can, may pillage. The whole country where we are is Urbaniſt, and follows the ſame opinion as ourſelves: now, conſider what juſt cauſe have we for attacking them.' The biſhop anſwered; 'How do we know whether they are Urbaniſts or not?' 'In God's name,' ſaid ſir Hugh Calverley, 'let us ſend a herald to them to know why they are thus drawn up in battle-array, and what they want; and let them

them be aſked which pope they obey. If they anſwer pope Urban, you will require of them, by virtue of the bull we have with us, that they accompany us to St. Omer, Aire, Arras, or whitherſoever we may wish to lead them. When they ſhall have had theſe queſtions put to them, we ſhall know their intentions, and may then call a council.'

This propoſal was adopted, and a herald called, whoſe name was Montfort, and attached to the duke of Brittany. He was ordered by theſe lords to ride to the Flemings, and told what he was to ſay, and how to act when among them. He obeyed their commands, and, clothed in his proper coat of arms, without ſuſpecting any accident, made for the Flemings, who were drawn up in handſome order of battle. He wiſhed to addreſs himſelf to ſome knights; but he could not, for as ſoon as the Flemings ſaw him, without ever aſking what was his buſineſs, or making any inquiries, they ſurrounded him and ſlew him like ignorant people, nor could thoſe gentlemen who were there ſave him. The Engliſh, on ſeeing this action, for they kept their eyes on them, were mad: as were alſo the citizens of Ghent who accompanied them, and were eager to urge them on, hoping that by theſe means new troubles would fall on Flanders.

The Engliſh ſaid,—'This mob has murdered our herald: they ſhall dearly pay for it, or we will all die on the ſpot.' The archers were ordered to advance on the Flemings. A citizen of Bruges or Ghent was made a knight, and ſhortly the battle began

began briſkly; for, to ſay the truth, the Flemings defended themſelves very well, but the archers wounded or beat down many, when the men at arms broke through them, and with their pointed ſpears killed multitudes on their firſt charge. In ſhort, the English won the day, and the Flemings were defeated. They thought to keep together in a body and enter Dunkirk; but the English followed them cloſely and kept up the engagement ſo warmly that they entered the town with them. Numbers were ſlain in the ſtreets or on the ſhore, though they there gained ſome advantage, for the English loſt four hundred at leaſt.

As the English purſued, the Flemings retired: many detached parties fought, in which ſeveral knights and ſquires from Flanders were ſlain; ſcarcely any eſcaped death or captivity. Thus did this affair end: there were full nine thouſand Flemings killed at this battle of Dunkirk.

The day this battle had taken place, ſir John Villain and ſir John du Moulin had returned to the earl of Flanders at Lille, and had repeated to the earl all they had ſeen and heard from the English. The earl was very melancholy on the ſubject, not knowing how to act: he was ſtill more ſo, and with greater reaſon, when he heard the news of the ſlaughter and defeat of his men at Dunkirk.

He bore it with tolerable patience, and comforted himſelf as well as he could, by ſaying,—'Well, if we have loſt this time, at another, pleaſe God, we ſhall win.' He inſtantly diſpatched a meſ-

a meſſenger to the duke of Burgundy, who was with the king of France, with private letters, to give him information of this event, and for him to conſider of it; for he concluded that ſince the Engliſh had thus entered Flanders and killed his ſubjects, they would not reſt there, but would advance further into the country and do more miſchief.

The duke of Burgundy, on receiving this intelligence, ſent knights and ſquires to garriſon St. Omer, Aire, St. Venant, Bailleul, Bergues, Caſſel, and all the ſtrong places on the frontiers of Flanders, and to guard the entrance of Artois.

We will return to the English, and ſay how they proſpered.

CHAP LV.

THE ENGLISH, UNDER THE COMMAND OF THE BISHOP OF NORWICH, HAVING CONQUERED ALL THE COAST FROM GRAVELINES TO SLUYS, LAY SIEGE TO YPRES.

AFTER the defeat near Dunkirk and the conquest of that town, the Engliſh were ſwollen with pride, and thought all Flanders was their own. To ſay the truth, had they marched directly to Bruges, many who were well acquainted with the ſtate of that town, ſay it would have ſurrendered to them: but they acted

ed otherwiſe; for they had determined to march to Bourbourg, to take that town, and then to advance to Aire and Caſſel, conquering the whole country ſo as to leave no enemy in their rear, and then to lay ſiege to Ypres. They imagined the town of Ypres would ſurrender on ſeeing that the country was conquered.

The Engliſh left Dunkirk, after having done their pleaſure with it, and marched for Bourbourg: the inhabitants of which place, being much alarmed, no ſooner ſaw them coming than they inſtantly ſurrendered, on having their lives and fortunes ſpared. The Engliſh entered the place with great joy; for they ſaid they would there eſtabliſh a handſome garriſon, to make war on St. Omer and the adjacent frontiers.

After this, they gained the caſtle of Dixmude: but it was three days before they took it by ſtorm, and the garriſon of two hundred men were ſlain. The Engliſh repaired it, and declared they would keep it to the utmoſt of their power, garriſoning it again with freſh men at arms. They continued their march to Caſſel, which they took, where they made a great booty, and peopled it again with their own men.

They ſtill continued their march, ſaying, that they would have a look at Aire; but many, well acquainted with its ſituation, knew it was not eaſy to be taken, and would coſt too much: however, the biſhop of Norwich ſaid, he would have a near view of it.

At this time, the governor of Aire was a gallant knight from Picardy, called ſir Robert de Bethune,

Bethune, viſcount de Meaux: there were alſo with him ſir John de Roye, the lord de Clary, ſir John de Bethune his brother, the lord de Montigny, ſir Perducas de Pont Saint, ſir John de Chaugny and ſir Florens his ſon, with ſeveral more; ſo that there were about ſix ſcore lances of good men at arms, knights and ſquires.

When the biſhop of Norwich, ſir Hugh Calverley, ſir Henry de Beaumont, ſir Thomas Trivet, ſir William Helmon, ſir Matthew Redman and the reſt were advanced to a place near Aire, called the New Ditch, they formed themſelves in battle-array, and thus marched on in cloſe order with banners and pennons fluttering in the wind; for they knew not what intentions the viſcount and his companions might have.

The viſcount with his knights and ſquires were handſomely drawn up on the cauſeway before the barriers of Aire, and plainly ſaw the Engliſh march beſide them, on the road to St. Venant; but, as they were not in numbers ſufficient to bar that paſſage, they remained quiet at their poſt to defend themſelves if attacked. The Engliſh marched by, and took up their quarters two leagues from St. Venant: the governor of that place was a knight of Picardy called ſir William de Melle, who had fortified the church of the town to ſerve as a place of retreat ſhould it be neceſſary: he found it ſo, for the town was only incloſed by ſmall paliſadoes and ditches. The attack did not laſt long before the Engliſh entered it, when the French retreated, ſome to the caſtle, others

others to the church. Thoſe in the caſtle were not attacked; for it was marvellouſly ſtrong, and could not be approached for the deep and wide ditches which ſurrounded it: but the church was inſtantly aſſaulted by the Engliſh on their entrance into the town, for they had heard that the men at arms had retreated thither.

Sir William de Melle was a good and gallant knight, and would have defended the church of St. Venant valiantly; but the Engliſh archers had ſurrounded it, and ſhot ſo rapidly and with ſuch good aim that ſcarcely any dared ſhew themſelves in its defence. Thoſe who were on the battlements were provided with ſtones, pieces of wood and artillery, which they uſed with ſuch ſucceſs as to wound many; but the attack was continued with ſo great earneſtneſs by the Engliſh that the church was taken by ſtorm and ſir William in it, who had fought valiantly. The others did the ſame; and had they entertained any hopes of being ſupported, they would have held out longer, which was the cauſe that they were thus eaſily taken. Sir William de Melle was made a priſoner: he agreed for his ranſom, and returned to France with the conſent of his captor, to whom he had given his word according to the manner in which all French and Engliſh gentlemen behave to one another in ſimilar caſes; but not ſo the Germans, who, whenever they take a priſoner throw him into durance vile, loaded with irons, in order to gain a more conſiderable ranſom.

The

The biſhop of Norwich and his army, on their departure from St. Venant, quartered themſelves in the foreſt of Niepe, which was not far diſtant, and near to Bailleul. They entered the caſtlewick of Poperingue, and took all the incloſed towns, wherein they found much money and great booty, which they ſent to Bergues or Bourbourg. When they had thus laid the whole country under their ſubjection, ſo that none came to oppoſe them, and when they were maſters of the coaſt from Gravelines to Sluys, having poſſeſsed themſelves of Dunkirk, Nieuport, Furnes and Blanquenbergue, they advanced to lay ſiege to Ypres. There the biſhop, ſir Hugh Calverley and the Engliſh halted, and then ſent meſſengers to Ghent. I have good reaſon to ſuppoſe that Francis Atremen went to them, and was at all their battles and conqueſts, and had ſerved as conductor of the Engliſh from town to town, and from village to village.

CHAP. LVI.

THE MEN OF GHENT ASSIST THE ENGLISH IN THEIR SIEGE OF YPRES.—THE LORD DE ST. LEGER GOING TO REINFORCE THE GARRISON OF COURTRAY, BY ORDERS OF THE KING OF FRANCE, IS DEFEATED BY A PARTY OF ENGLISH NEAR COMMINES.

WHEN Peter du Bois, Peter le Nuitre, and the captains in Ghent heard that the Engliſh

liſh demanded their aſſiſtance, and were lying before Ypres, they were much pleaſed, and prepared themſelves to march thither as ſpeedily as poſſible. They ſet out from Ghent on the Saturday morning after the octave of St. Peter and St. Paul, to the amount of near twenty thouſand, with a very conſiderable train of carts, and in good array. They marched by Courtray, and came before Ypres.

The English were rejoiced at their coming, and made great cheer for them, ſaying they would take Ypres, and then conquer Bruges, Damme and Sluys, making no doubt that before September, they would have conquered all Flanders, Thus did they boaſt of their good fortune.

The governor of Ypres at that time was the lord de Saint Pi, a very prudent and valiant knight who had thrown himſelf into the place, where every thing was done according to his plans and orders. The men at arms who had accompanied this knight thither by order of the duke of Burgundy and the earl of Flanders, were ſir John de Bougraigne, caſtellan of Ypres, ſir Baldwin de Delbedene his ſon, the lord Diſſeghien, the lord de Stades, ſir John Blanchart, ſir John de Merſelede, ſir Hamel, ſir Nicholas Belle, lord de Harlequebecque, the lord de Rolleghen, ſir John Ahoutre, John de Saint Pi, nephew to the governor, François Belle, ſir George Belle, and many more. They had great difficulty to withſtand the English, who attacked them openly and covertly. They were likewiſe under alarm leſt there ſhould be ſome underſtanding between the

the townſmen and thoſe from Ghent; and leſt the place ſhould, by treaſon, fall into their hands.

A gallant knight of Hainault called ſir John de Jumont, was at this time in Courtray as its governor, having accepted it at the earneſt entreaties of the duke of Burgundy and earl of Flanders. At that time no knight of Flanders dared to undertake it, ſo dangerous did the defence of it appear; for when the king of France had marched away it was diſmantled and burnt, on which account very few reſided there; and it was ſo much deſtroyed, that they could ſcarcely find a place to put their horſes in.

Sir John de Jumont undertook the grand enterpriſe of defending it. He ſpeedily repaired it, and behaved ſo gallantly, through God's mercy and grace, that there was not any damage done it; on the contrary, much honour accrued to him.

The duke of Burgundy, who carefully attended to the affairs of Flanders, as they ſo nearly concerned him, ſent from France ſixty Breton lances to Courtray, to reinforce and encourage ſir John de Jumont. Theſe men at arms marched to Lille, under the command of the duke; from thence they ſet out on a Friday morning to Commines, where they arrived, under the command of the lord de St. Leger and Yvonnet de Cantemat. By break of day full two hundred Engliſh lances had come to the town of Commines, to collect forage from the flat countries, and carry it to the army before

Ypres. Theſe Bretons had not any expectation of their coming, and fell into their hands. There was a ſharp engagement at the foot of the bridge of Commines, where the Bretons defended themſelves marvellouſly well, and, if they had been ſupported by as many again as themſelves, they would have eſcaped without loſs.

As it was they were conſtrained to fly, for they were too few to oppoſe ſuch numbers. The greater part were ſlain, or taken as they were eſcaping towards Lille. The lord de St. Leger was deſperately wounded, and left for dead on the field. Fortunate were thoſe who eſcaped from this engagement: and the purſuit of the Engliſh after the Bretons laſted to within half a league of the town of Lille. The lord de St. Leger, although mortally wounded, was carried to that town with great difficulty, where he died five days afterwards. Five of his ſquires died alſo, and thus ended this adventure.

CHAP. LVII.

THE BISHOP OF LIEGE, NOT BEING ABLE TO BRING ABOUT A PEACE BETWEEN THE BISHOP OF NORWICH AND THE EARL OF FLANDERS, RETURNS HOME.

THE ſiege of Ypres was continued with great activity on the part of the Engliſh and Flemings, who made many aſſaults which much

much frightened thoſe in the town. The earl of Flanders was not very well aſſured but that Ypres muſt fall; for the Engliſh are very ſubtle, and they could receive great reinforcements from England, by way of Calais, without his knowledge, or oppoſition, having garriſons in all the towns on the road. They might, if they had choſen, have had reinforcements from England; but they did not think much was to be dreaded at the commencement, either from the earl or the power of France, for ſeveral great Engliſh barons were prepared and ready to croſs the ſea at Calais, to aſſiſt their countrymen from the environs of Dover, Sandwich, and Lewes, had they been ſo required: they amounted to a thouſand lances, and two thouſand archers in the parts above mentioned. Sir William Beauchamp and ſir William Windſor, marſhals of England, were appointed by the king and council to command theſe men at arms, by which the duke of Lancaſter loſt this opportunity of making his expedition to Portugal.

All England, as I have before ſaid, were more inclined to ſerve in the army of the biſhop of Norwich than in that of the duke of Lancaſter.

The earl of Flanders was informed of all theſe events which were paſſing in England, as well as of what was going forward before Ypres. He therefore reſolved to provide, as much as was in his power, a remedy for them; for he ſuppoſed the duke of Burgundy would excite the barons of France to exert themſelves to

drive the Engliſh out of Flanders, and from the countries which they had ſo recently conquered. But as he knew that France was very extenſive, that ſeveral barons bound to ſerve the king were at a great diſtance, and that many things might happen before they could arrive, he reſolved to ſend to ſir Arnoul de Sorge, biſhop of Liege, who was a ſtaunch Urbanist, to request he would come to Ypres and negotiate with the Engliſh to decamp and march elſewhere; for he had been much astoniſhed at their proceedings, ſince it was well known to the world that both himſelf and country were good Urbanists.

The earl managed ſo well that the biſhop of Liege came to Hainault, and from thence to Valenciennes, Douay and Lille, where he had a conference with the earl, who informed him of what he wiſhed him to do. After this, the biſhop left Liege and came to the camp before Ypres, where the Engliſh and Ghent men received him very politely, and attentively listened to all he had to ſay. I was told at the time, that the earl of Flanders, through the means of the biſhop of Liege, offered to the biſhop of Norwich and the Engliſh, if they would break up their ſiege, and carry their war against the countries of the Clementists, to ſend them five hundred lances to ſerve under their orders for three months, and at his own expence.

The biſhop of Norwich replied, he would attentively conſider and diſcuſs this propoſal.

Many

Many words paſſed; for the Ghent men adviſed him not to put any truſt in what the earl had ſaid, for there was no dependence on his promiſes, and told him that if he could he would deceive him. Having therefore maturely conſidered every thing, he gave notice to the biſhop of Liege, that he might return when he pleaſed, for he would not pay any attention to his offers; and, as for the ſiege, he would never depart thence until he had reduced the town of Ypres to his obedience.

The biſhop finding he could obtain nothing more, took his leave and returned to Lille, and gave the earl of Flanders the anſwer he had received. When the earl ſaw that he could not obtain any terms, he was more penſive than before; for he clearly perceived, that unleſs the force of France raiſed the ſiege, he ſhould loſe his good town of Ypres. He therefore wrote other letters, giving a detail of what anſwers he had received, and what was going forwards, which he ſent by one of his own knights to his ſon and daughter of Burgundy, who reſided at Compiegne. The biſhop of Liege left the earl, and returned through Douay and Valenciennes to his own country.

CHAP. LVIII.

THE KING OF FRANCE ISSUES A GRAND SUMMONS, WITH THE INTENTION OF RAISING THE SIEGE OF YPRES.—SOME OF THE EARL OF FLANDERS' MEN ARE DEFEATED BY THE ENGLISH BEFORE THE CHURCH OF EMENIN.

THE duke of Burgundy, being convinced that things would end badly if the king of France with an army did not provide a remedy, exerted himself for a parliament to be holden at Compiegne of all the great barons and princes of the realm of France.

To this parliament all who were ſummoned came, and the duke of Brittany perſonally attended. It was there diſcuſſed, whether or not the king of France, with his uncles the dukes of Berry, Burgundy and Bourbon ſhould march to Flanders with a greater force than he had commanded at Roſebecque, to raiſe the ſiege of Ypres, and offer combat to the Engliſh and Flemings, if they ſhould think proper to wait for him.

It was reſolved in the affirmative; and the king of France iſſued his ſummons throughout the kingdom for every man to be at Arras, or in that neighbourhood, by the 15th day of Auguſt, provided with all things ſuitable to his rank. The king wrote alſo to thoſe at a diſtance, ſuch as the counts d'Armagnac and Savoy, and to duke Frederick of Bavaria.

This

This duke was in upper Germany, and the ſon of one of the brothers of the reigning duke: he was very deſirous of viſiting the court of France and bearing arms for it, as he was fond of every ſort of honour; and they had told him, which he believed as fact, that all honours in the world were to be had in France. Duke Frederick, being at ſuch a diſtance, was the firſt ſent for: he made his preparations on receiving the ſummons, and ſaid he would come through Hainault, to visit his uncle and his couſins, the count de Blois and others.

During the time theſe warlike preparations were making, the ſiege of Ypres continued with great vigour. There were many attacks and ſkirmiſhes, in which ſeveral were killed or wounded: but the governor, ſir John de Saint Pi, made ſo good a defence, that no eſſential damage was done.

During this ſiege, the earl of Flanders was informed that the church of Emenin was ſtrong, and worth poſſeſſing; for, ſhould the Engliſh come thither, they would eaſily take it, as it had no garriſon, and they would from thence much harraſs the country. The earl reſolved to take poſſeſſion of it; and, ſending for ſir John du Moulin, he ſaid to him,—'Sir John, collect a body of men from this town, and with croſsbows go to Emenin, and gain the church, leſt the Engliſh fortify it; for, if they win it, they will harraſs all the ſurrounding country.' Sir John replied, he would willingly do ſo, and immediately made preparations for the excurſion.

ſion. On the morrow morning, he mounted his horſe, accompanied by a young knight, a baſtard ſon of the earl of Flanders, called ſir John Sans-terre, and about ſixty lances, with the ſame number of archers. On their leaving Lille, they took the road to Emenin, but found only a few men at arms there, who, of their own free-will, were guarding the church.

This ſame day, about two hundred Engliſh and Gaſcon lances made alſo an excurſion; and learning from the foragers that there were ſome men at arms and croſs-bows in Emenin; they ſtuck ſpurs into their horſes, and never halted until they arrived at the town, when, diſmounting in the ſquare before the church, they graſped their ſpears and ſhouted their cries.

Sir John du Moulin and the baſtard of Flanders, ſeeing from this body of men that a combat was unavoidable, formed in battle-array in the ſquare, and ordered their croſs-bows to ſhoot: they at firſt wounded ſeveral of the Engliſh, who ſoon broke through them; but for a ſmall body they made a good fight, though many were ſtruck down, wounded and killed.

The Engliſh were ſo ſuperior in numbers, that the Flemings were defeated, and the two knights made priſoners, who behaved gallantly in defending themſelves. Of the remainder, many were taken; and very few returned to Lille, being moſtly ſlain or captured. Thus ended this expedition to Emenin, which greatly vexed the earl of Flanders, but at that time he could

could not help it. The Gaſcons and English carried their priſoners with them, and made much of them; but it was not long before they ranſomed themſelves.

CHAP. LIX.

THE ENGLISH AND GHENT MEN MAKE A SHARP ATTACK ON YPRES; BUT, LEARNING THAT THE KING OF FRANCE HAD MARCHED AN ARMY INTO ARTOIS, THEY INSTANTLY BREAK UP THE SIEGE.

IT always happens, that in war there are gains and loſſes: very extraordinary are the chances, as thoſe know well who follow the profeſſion. The ſiege of Ypres was puſhed on with unwearied force; and it was fully the intention of the biſhop of Norwich, the Engliſh and Peter du Bois, to conquer Ypres by ſtorm or otherwiſe, as the vigour of their attacks ſhewed.

Among the many aſſaults, there was one much ſeverer than the reſt; for it laſted from morning until almoſt night. Many valiant actions were done by ſeveral on both ſides, and the Engliſh and Flemings made vaſt exertions to conquer it. The beſieged created that day four knights, John de St. Pi, nephew to the governor, François Belle, George Belle, and John Belle, who ſhewed themſelves good knights in this

this firſt diſplay of their knighthood. An Engliſh ſquire, called Lewis Lin, was killed at this attack, which was very ſharp; and numbers were wounded on each ſide, who too raſhly expoſed themſelves.

The Engliſh archers, poſted on the ditches of the town, shot ſo expertly and rapidly that ſcarcely any dared to appear on the battlements to defend the place. There were collected that day in Ypres two tons of artillery, eſpecially arrows, which were shot into the town, ſo that none ventured to paſs through thoſe ſtreets near the walls where the attack was made, for fear of being killed, if not well armed and shielded.

This attack laſted until night, when the English and Flemings, who had fought the whole day in two battalions, returned to the camp quite tired, as were likewiſe thoſe in the town.

The English and Flemings, finding they could not take the town by ſtorm, and having expended much of their artillery, reſolved to have quantities of faggots made and collected, with which and earth they could fill up the ditches, ſo that they might advance to fight hand to hand with the garriſon, undermine the walls, and, by throwing them down, win the place.

Workmen were inſtantly employed to procure and cut down as much wood as poſſible in the neighbourhood of Ypres, which was to be placed within ſide of the ditches and covered with

with earth: but this was not ſo ſoon done, nor could they accomplish their intentions; for the king of France, having a great deſire to raiſe this ſiege and fight with the English at all events, haſtened his preparations, ſet out from Compiegne and marched to Arras.

The conſtable of France, with many barons who formed the van of the army, had already arrived, and were quartered in Artois. The duke of Brittany came with two thouſand lances, as he was anxious to aſſiſt his couſin the earl of Flanders on this occaſion. Indeed he was much bounden ſo to do, for he had found him, in former times, eager to befriend him in his diſtreſs. All the lords, both from far and near, were on their march and at hand. The count of Savoy and the count of Geneva, came with ſeven hundred honeſt Savoyards. Duke Frederick of Bavaria was haſtening with a ſtrong body of men at arms, and had arrived in Hainault. He reſided at Queſnoy with his uncle duke Albert, his aunt, the ducheſs Margaret, and with his couſins.

The dukes of Lorraine and Bar arrived with a large body in Artois. Sir William de Namur, not having attended the former war, as the earl had excuſed him, came with two hundred good lances to ſerve the king of France and duke of Burgundy. He had paſſed through Hainault, and fixed his quarters in the country round Tournay. It was wonderful to ſee what bodies of men different lords brought to ſerve the king of France.

The

The count Guy de Blois lay ill at Landrecy* during the whole time theſe warlike preparations were making, and neither himſelf nor his people knew if he would be able to bear the fatigues of this campaign with the king. He was carried in a litter to Beaumont in Hainault, and was ſomewhat better, for that air was more agreeable to him than that of Landrecy. Notwithſtanding he was very unwell and feeble, he made ample preparations, as did his dependants in the country of Blois, ſuch as the lord de Montigny, the lord de Vreſin, ſir Vilhennes de St. Martin, ſir Waleran de Douſtienne governor of Remorentin, and other knights and ſquires who came to ſerve under the young king of France.

News was brought to the biſhop of Norwich, ſir Hugh Calverley and the Engliſh beſieging Ypres, that the king of France was haſtening, by forced marches, with an army of upwards of twenty thouſand men at arms, knights and ſquires, and ſixty thouſand other men. This intelligence was repeated from ſo many quarters, that at laſt it was thought to be true, for at firſt they would not believe it. They heard for certain that it was ſo, and that if they remained where they were, they would have to fight with them. They alſo learnt that the duke of Brittany was with the king of France, and coming againſt them, which aſtoniſhed them much.

They called a council on this information, to

* Landrecy,—a ſtrong town in Hainault, dioceſe of Courtray.

conſider

conſider what line of conduct to purſue. Having weighed every circumſtance, and not finding themſelves in ſufficient ſtrength to wait for the whole force of the king, they judged it to be more prudent for Peter du Bois, Peter le Nuitre and the Ghent men to return to their town, and the Engliſh to retreat towards Bergues and Bourbourg, which they were to garriſon: and if any force ſhould come from England, or if king Richard or his uncles ſhould croſs the ſea, they would ſend them advice of it.

This reſolution was adopted, and they broke up their camp. The Ghent men ſet out on their return home, where they arrived. The English retired to Bergues and Bourbourg, and entered the forts which they had conquered.

The day that the English began their retreat, Thomas lord Percy, ſon to the earl of Northumberland, arrived. He came from Pruſſia, and hearing on his road that the kings of France and England were to engage in the plains of Flanders or Artois, each at the head of his army, the knight was ſo much rejoiced, and had ſo great a deſire to be preſent at the battle, that the journey, which at a moderate rate of travelling would have taken forty days, he performed in fourteen, leaving his equipage and ſervants behind, and frequently changing horſes. He afterwards learnt that his baggage had arrived in leſs than twenty days in the town of Ghent. Such good will and gallantry deſerve much praiſe.

CHAP.

CHAP. LX.

DUKE FREDERICK OF BAVARIA ARRIVES AT THE ARMY OF THE KING OF FRANCE.—COUNT GUY DE BLOIS, NOTWITHSTANDING HIS ILL HEALTH, COMES TO ARRAS ATTENDED BY HIS MEN AT ARMS.

INTELLIGENCE was brought to the king of France, in the city of Arras, and to the lords with him, that the English and Ghent men had raiſed the siege and decamped from before Ypres. The king was eager to hurry matters and purſue them, ſo that they should not eſcape. He ſet out from Arras, and came to Mont St. Eloy, a very handſome abbey, where he remained four days waiting for the arrival of the duke of Berry. The army was continually increaſed by thoſe who came to it from all parts, and it was known, through the conſtable, the marshals and sir Guiſcard count dauphin, maſter of the croſs-bows, that the king had with him upwards of one hundred thouſand men.

The king departed from Mont St. Eloy, following the road to St. Omer, and came to Aire, of which place the viſcount de Meaux was governor. He tarried there two days, the army ſtill increaſing. The conſtable with the van were advanced, and quartered in the town of Caſſel. The king went to St. Omer, where he

ſtopped

ſtopped for the arrival of his people, who were coming to him from every quarter.

When duke Frederick of Bavaria arrived at the army, the great barons of France, in order to do him honour, went out to meet him, as he had come from ſuch a diſtant country to ſerve the king, who entertained him handſomely, and was thankful for his arrival. He cauſed him to be quartered as near to himſelf as poſſible during the whole expedition, as was but juſt.

In the army were full three hundred thouſand horſes: and it was wonderful where proviſions could come from, or be found to ſupply ſuch an army. At times, indeed, there was a ſcarcity; at others, they had abundance. The count Guy de Blois, who reſided at Beaumont in Hainault, notwithſtanding he was not yet recovered from the long illneſs he had been viſited with during the ſummer, thought it would not be for his honour to remain idle, when ſo many great and powerful princes and lords were in the field; beſides, inquiries had been made after him, as he was one of the leaders of the rear-ward. It was therefore better for him to join them, truſting to the will of God, than to remain behind under a ſuppoſition of diſſembling.

This gallant lord began his journey; but as he was unable to ride, he ordered his litter, and took leave of the lady his wife, and of his ſon Lewis. Several of his council, on account of the great heat and cloſeneſs of the weather, looked on this journey as a wrong meaſure, whilſt

whilſt others who heard of it thought it a great proof of his courage. He was accompanied from Hainault by the lord de Sanzeſt, the lord de Hanzelles, ſir Gerard de Warrieres, ſir Thomas de Diſtre, the lord de Douſtrenent, John de Ghiſnelle, who was created a knight on the road, and ſeveral more. He paſſed through Cambray, and came to Arras, and the longer he travelled the better was his health. His vaſſals from Blois, hearing of his journey, went to meet him. On his arrival at Arras, his people collected together, to the amount of more than four hundred lances, and always followed him. He had his proviſions from Hainault, and in this reſpect was moſt abundantly ſupplied. Let us return to the king of France.

CHAP. LXI.

THE VAN OF THE FRENCH ARMY TAKES CASSEL AND TRUGHEN.—THE ENGLISH ABANDON BERGUES, AND RETIRE TO BOURBOURG, WHEREIN THE KING OF FRANCE BESIEGES THEM.

THE king of France continued his march to St. Omer, where he halted and refreſhed himſelf. The van, with the conſtable and marſhals, advanced to Caſſel, which was in the hands of the English.

Engliſh. The town was attacked, taken by ſtorm, and all in it put to the ſword. Thoſe who could eſcape retreated to Bergues, where was ſir Hugh Calverley with full three thouſand Engliſh. The biſhop of Norwich was not there, having retired to Gravelines, to be the ſooner at Calais ſhould there be occaſion. The Engliſh had burnt and pillaged all the country near to Caſſel.

The king of France, on his arrival at St. Omer, was lodged at an abbey out of the town, on the road to Bergues, called Ranombergues, where he remained. He came there on a Friday, and on the following day the conſtable, the marſhals, with the lord de Coucy and a great number of good men at arms, took the field and came before the caſtle of Trughen, wherein were about three hundred men at arms, who had formed a garriſon of this place the whole ſeaſon.

They made a vigorous attack on the caſtle, and exerted themſelves very much: indeed, they were forced to do ſo if they wiſhed for conqueſt, as the Engliſh within defended themſelves ſo valiantly that it was marvellous to think of their proweſs. However, by continued attacks, and gallant deeds of arms, the caſtle was taken, and all within put to death, for the conſtable would not ſhew mercy to any one. In the lower court was found the moſt beautiful white horſe that had been ſeen for years, which was preſented to the conſtable, who inſtantly ſent it to the king of France. The king willingly accepted the horſe, and was ſo pleaſed with it that he rode it all Sunday.

The count de Blois, at this period, arrived at the army with his company. He was appointed to the rear division, as he had been last year at the battle of Roſebecque, in company with the count d'Eu, the count de Harcourt, the lord de Chatillon and the lord de la Fere. Men at arms were conſtantly coming in from all parts. It was a fine dry ſummer, otherwiſe it would have been bad for the horſes near the ſea-ſhore and impoſſible for them to have advanced into the country.

All the Engliſh except the biſhop, who, quite thunderſtruck, was gone to Gravelines, had retired into the town of Bergues, which was only incloſed by a paliſade and ditches: he ſorely repented having undertaken this expedition, for he ſaw that all he had done would now be turned with ſhame againſt him, and was ſtill more ſorry for the words he had uttered which had been repeated through France. He had boaſted during the time he was beſieging Ypres, that he would there wait for the king of France and his army, and offer them combat. He now felt how ſuddenly he had been forced to raiſe the ſiege and fly, for his army could not reſiſt that of the king.

The Engliſh at Calais found great fault with him, ſaying he had very ill employed the pope's money. In truth, the duke of Lancaſter, who had been prevented by this expedition of the biſhop from carrying his own into execution, did not wiſh it would turn out otherwiſe. The principal barons of England were of the ſame ſentiment; for when ſir William Windſor, their marſhal, ſent

to

to tell them, whilſt before Ypres, that if they wished for reinforcements, they should have very numerous ones, the bishop anſwered, as did ſir Thomas Trivet and ſir William Helmon*, that they had ſtrength enough, and more than they wished, to combat the king of France and the army he could bring againſt them. But ſir Hugh Calverley, who had ſeen more ſervice than any of the others, had always held a different language, and ſaid during the ſiege of Ypres, when he heard of the offer from the barons in England,—'Gentlemen, you ſeem to have great confidence in your ſtrength: why should we refuſe the aſſiſtance of our countrymen, when they offer to come to us and the country conſents to it? A day may come, perhaps, when we shall repent of our refuſal.' But theſe words were not attended to, as they ſaid they had men ſufficient. Things therefore continued as they were, and in the end they loſt more than they gained by it.

Sir Hugh Calverley, on his arrival at Bergues, quartered himſelf and his men in the different hôtels and houſes of the town: they were in the whole, including archers, more than four thouſand men. Sir Hugh ſaid,—'I am determined to keep this town; it is of good ſtrength, and we are enough to defend it. I expect we shall have, in five or ſix days, reinforcements from England; for they will learn our ſituation, and alſo the force of our enemies.' All replied, 'God aſſiſt us!'

* Sir W. Helmon. Ekmham, according to Carte.

Upon this, he made very prudent regulations: on dividing his men under pennons and into companies, to mount the walls and guard the gates, he found he had numbers ſufficient. He ordered all the ladies and women, children and lower claſſes of inhabitants to retire into a church, whence they were not to ſtir.

The king of France was at the abbey of Ranombergues, and learnt that the English had retreated to Bergues. A council was held on the occaſion, when it was ordered that the van, with the conſtable and marshals, should advance beyond the town and encamp on one of its ſides; and the king of France, with the dukes of Berry, Burgundy and Bourbon would follow with the main army; that the count de Blois and the count d'Eu, with the rear diviſion, should lodge themſelves on the other ſide of the town, and thus ſurround the English.

This plan was executed; and the king ſet out from Ranombergues, attended by his whole army. It was a beautiful ſight to behold theſe banners, pennons and helmets glittering in the ſun, and ſuch numbers of men at arms that the eye could not compaſs them: they ſeemed like a moving foreſt, ſo upright did they hold their lances. Thus they marched in four diviſions towards Bergues, to incloſe the English in that town.

About eight o'clock in the morning, an English herald entered the town, who, by the courteſy of the lords of France, had paſſed through their army: he waited on ſir Hugh Calverley in his hôtel,

hôtel, and ſpoke ſo loud that every one heard him. 'Herald, whence doſt thou come?' 'My lord,' replied the herald, 'I come from the French army, where I have ſeen the fineſt men at arms, and in ſuch vaſt numbers that there is not at this day another king who can ſhew the like.'

'And theſe fine men at arms which thou art ſpeaking of,' ſaid ſir Hugh, 'what number are they?' 'By my faith, my lord, they are full twenty-ſix thouſand men at arms: handſomer nor better armed were never ſeen.'

'Ha, ha!' replied ſir Hugh, who was much provoked at the latter part of his ſpeech, 'thou art a fine fellow to come and mock us with this pompous tale. I know well thou haſt lied; for many a time have I ſeen the armies of France, but they never amounted to twenty-ſix thouſand; no, not even to ſix thouſand men at arms.'

As he ſaid this, the watch of the town, who was at his poſt, ſounded his trumpet, for the van of the enemy was about paſſing near the walls.

Sir Hugh then, addreſſing the knights and ſquires preſent, ſaid; 'Come, come: let us go and ſee theſe twenty-ſix thouſand men at arms march by, for our watch blows his horn.' They went on the walls of the place, and, leaning on them, obſerved the march of the van, which might have conſiſted of about fifteen hundred lances, with the conſtable, the marſhals, the maſter of the croſs-bows and the lord de Coucy. Next came the duke of Brittany, the earl of Flanders and the count de St. Pol, who had under

der their command about fifteen hundred lances more. Sir Hugh Calverley, who thought he had ſeen the whole army, ſaid,—'Now ſee if I did not ſay truth; where are theſe twenty-ſix thouſand men? Why, if they be three thouſand men at arms, they are ten thouſand. Let us go to our dinner, for I do not yet ſee ſuch a force as ſhould oblige us to ſurrender the town. This herald would frighten us well, if we were to believe him.'

The herald was much aſhamed, but he ſaid,—'My lord, you have as yet only ſeen the vanguard: the king and his uncles are behind with the main army, and there is beſides a rear diviſion, which conſiſts of more than two thouſand lances. You will ſee the whole in four hours, if you remain here.'

Sir Hugh paid not any attention to him, but returned to his houſe, ſaying he had ſeen every thing, and ſeated himſelf at table. He had ſcarcely done ſo, than the watch again blew his horn, and ſo loud as if he would burſt it. Sir Hugh roſe from table, ſaying he would ſee what was the cauſe of this, and mounted the battlements. At this moment, the king of France marched by, attended by his uncles, the duke Frederick, the duke of Lorraine, the count of Savoy, the dauphin of Auvergne, the count de la Marche and their troops: in this battalion were full ſixteen thouſand lances. Sir Hugh felt himſelf much diſappointed, and ſaid to the herald, who was by his ſide, 'I have been in the wrong to blame you: come,

come, come: let us mount our horſes and ſave ourſelves, for it will do us no good to remain here. I no longer know the ſtate of France: I have never ſeen ſuch numbers collected together by three-fourths as I now ſee and have ſeen in the van: beſides, the rear diviſion is ſtill to come.' Upon this, ſir Hugh Calverley left the walls and returned to his houſe. All the horſes being ready ſaddled and loaded, they mounted, and, having ordered the gates to be opened which lead to Bourbourg, they ſet off without any noiſe, carrying with them all their pillage. Had the French ſuſpected this, they could eaſily have ſtopped them; but they were ignorant of it for a long time, ſo that they were nearly arrived at Bourbourg before they heard of it.

Sir Hugh Calverley halted in the plain to wait for his rear and baggage. He was very melancholy, and ſaid to ſir Thomas Trivet and others who had come to meet him; 'By my faith, gentlemen, we have this time made a moſt ſhameful expedition: never was ſo pitiful or wretched a one made from England. You would have your wills, and placed your confidence in this biſhop of Norwich, who wanted to fly before he had wings: now ſee the honourable end you have brought it to. There is Bourbourg! if you chooſe it, retire thither; but for my part I ſhall march to Gravelines and Calais, becauſe I find we are not of ſufficient ſtrength to cope with the king of France.'

The Engliſh knights, conſcious they had been to blame in ſeveral things, replied; 'God help us! we ſhall return to Bourbourg and wait the event,

event, ſuch as God may pleaſe to ordain.' Sir Hugh on this left them; and they threw themſelves into Bourbourg.

The king of France heard that the Engliſh had marched from Bergues and retreated to Bourbourg, leaving Bergues quite empty; the gates of which were opened to him, when the king entered with all who wiſhed it. The firſt who did ſo found enough to pillage, for the Engliſh had not been able to carry away every thing. The women were ſaved and ſent to St. Omer, but almoſt all the men were put to death and the town ſet on fire. The king marched on to lodge at a village, on account of the greatneſs of the fire. This happened on a Friday; and the lords encamped themſelves ſeparately in the fields as well as they could. It was fortunate for them that it was dry weather, for it could not be a finer ſeaſon, had it been cold and rainy, they could not have foraged. Indeed it was wonderful where they found forage for ſuch numbers of horſes, as well as proviſion for ſo large an army. But on the day on which they came before Bourbourg great quantities of ſtores arrived, of which the lords of France were duly informed. They reſolved to ſurround the town and attack it. The Bretons were, from avarice, eager to take it, on account of the great booty they expected to find there.

On the Saturday morning it was clear weather, and the army made itſelf ready to march to Bourbourg. The van-guard, the duke of Brittany, the

earl

earl of Flanders, the count de St. Pol, the conſtable of France, with about three thouſand lances, marched on the outſide of the walls, and halted oppoſite to the king's diviſion, which conſiſted of the fineſt men at arms that could be ſeen or imagined. They advanced to a large plain before Bourbourg, where the different lords drew up their men; and it was for a long time their intention to ſtorm the place. Banners and pennons were flying in the wind, and each lord under his own banner. The lords of France made a ſplendid ſhew, and had not been ſparing of any expence in exhibiting appearances ſuitable to their rank. The lord de Coucy and his ſtate were particularly noticed, for he had led courſers richly capariſoned, and ornamented with houſings with the ancient arms of Coucy mixed with thoſe he now bore. He himſelf was mounted on a beautiful horſe, on which he rode from ſide to ſide in a moſt graceful manner, to the delight of thoſe who ſaw him; all praiſed him for the agreeable manner with which he addreſſed every one.

The other great lords kept up a ſtate ſuitable to their dignity. More than four hundred knights were this day created. The heralds muſtered the knights who were before Bourbourg with the king, and they amounted to from ſeven to nine thouſand. In the army were upwards of twenty-five thouſand men at arms and ſquires.

The Engliſh were at their poſts in the town of Bourbourg, and, ſeeing this immenſe force of the king of France before them, expected an aſſault: they we pleaſed at the thought; but when they found

found themſelves ſhut up in a town which was only defended by paliſadoes, they were not ſo well ſatisfied: however, like men of courage, they had poſted themſelves in companies round the town. The lord Beaumont* (who is an earl in England, and his name Henry) commanded one hundred men at arms and three hundred archers, to guard one part of the town: ſir William Elmham, with as many men, guarded another part. Sir John de Châteauneuf, with the Gaſcons, had another quarter to defend as far as the tower, oppoſite to the quarters of the conſtable. The lord Ferrers, an Engliſhman, was with forty men at arms and as many archers at another part, ſo that the whole place was well guarded with men at arms and archers. Sir William Farrendon, ſir Matthew Redeman, and ſir Nicholas Tractont, with two hundred men and as many archers, were poſted in the ſquare before the church. They had appointed a body of men to watch and extinguiſh any fires that might happen; for the Engliſh were much afraid of the town being burnt, as the houſes were only covered with thatch.

In this ſituation were the Engliſh. I muſt now relate the gallant action which Francis Atremen performed this ſame Friday in the evening, when the king of France, after having taken Bergues, continued his march.

---

* Lord Beaumont. Froiſſart miſtakes: he was a baron, and his name was John: his ſon's name was Henry. See Dugdale.

† Q. If not Drayton, or Treſham.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXII.

FRANCIS ATREMEN SURPRISES OUDENARDE IN THE NIGHT-TIME.

FRANCIS Atremen, Peter du Bois, Peter le Nuitre and the other captains, after their return to Ghent from the ſiege of Ypres, were daily and nightly imagining how they could annoy their enemies. Francis Atremen found out, that the governor of Oudenarde, ſir Gilbert de Lieneghen and the men at arms, had left Oudenarde, by orders from the earl of Flanders, and were with the army of the king of France before Bergues and Bourbourg. He alſo learnt that the town was careleſsly guarded, and that the ditches in the meadows on the road to Hamme were dry, as they had emptied them of water to get the fiſh, ſo that the walls of the town might be approached on foot, and might be entered with ladders. Such was the intelligence the ſpies of Francis Atrement had brought to Ghent, who, at their leiſure, had examined the town; for the guards held the Ghent men very cheap, and, as it were, had forgotten, or were quite indifferent concerning them.

When Francis Atremen had heard all this from his ſpies, he went and related it to Peter du Bois, and ſaid; 'Peter, ſuch is the ſituation of Oudenarde: I am reſolved to riſk the chance of taking

it

it with ſcaling ladders: there never can be ſo good an opportunity as the preſent, for neither the governor nor the men at arms are in it, but with the king of France near St. Omer, and they have not the leaſt fear or ſuſpicions of any one.'

Peter du Bois inſtantly aſſented to the propoſal, and ſaid; 'Francis, if you ſucceed in this expedition, no man will ever have behaved better, and every one will praiſe you for ſo gallant an action.' 'I do not know,' replied he, 'how it may turn out, but my courage does not fail me, and my heart tells me that this night I ſhall gain Oudenarde.'

Francis Atremen then choſe four hundred men in whom he had the greateſt confidence, and, towards night-fall, ſet out on his road to Oudenarde. It was in the month of September, when the nights are tolerably long, and ſuch beautiful weather that it was a pleaſure to be out in it. About midnight they arrived in the meads of Oudenarde, having ladders with them. As they were traverſing the marſhes, there was a poor woman gathering graſs for her cows, who, hiding herſelf, heard their converſation, and knew from it that they were Ghent men going to ſurpriſe the town, for she ſaw them carrying ladders. She was at firſt much frightened, but recovering courage, ſaid to herſelf, that ſhe would haſten to the town and inform the guard of what ſhe had heard and ſeen. She made for the town by a ſhort path ſhe was acquainted with, and arrived at the ditches before the Ghent men, when ſhe began to moan and complain, ſo

that

that one of the night-guard going his rounds heard her, and aſked who ſhe was, ſhe ſaid ſhe was a poor woman who had come to tell them that a body of Ghent men were cloſe at hand; and that ſhe had ſeen them carrying many ladders to ſurpriſe Oudenarde; but now ſhe had given this information ſhe muſt get away, for ſhould they meet her ſhe would be a dead woman.

The poor woman departed, and the watch remained perfectly aſtoniſhed. He determined to keep quiet where he was, to ſee if this woman had told truth. The Ghent men, without horn or trumpet, were ſilently advancing to begin their enterpriſe: they made not any noiſe except by talking. Francis Atremen ſent forward four of his men, ordering them to reconnoitre without making the leaſt noiſe by coughing or otherwiſe, and report to him, ſhould they obſerve any thing.

They obeyed their orders, and Francis Atremen remained hid in the marſhes with his men, very near this poor woman, who heard and ſaw them diſtinctly; but they did not notice her. The four men advancing up to the ditches, neither ſaw nor heard any thing. It was very unlucky; for, if they had but ſeen a lighted candle, they would have thought there had been a good watch kept. They returned to Francis telling him they had not ſeen any thing, nor heard the leaſt noiſe.

'I believe the watch has gone his rounds,' ſaid Francis, 'and is now retired to bed: come, let us take this upper road which leads to the gates, and enter the ditches.' The good woman heard theſe words;

words; and what did she do? Why, she instantly returned by the same way as before, and came to the man who was listening on the walls and told him all she had heard, begging of him, for God's sake, to be on his guard and go to the Ghent gate to see if his companions were in a proper state, for very shortly the Ghent men would be at their post. 'I must now return,' said the woman, 'as I dare not stay longer, but I have told you all I have seen and heard: pay proper attention to it, for I shall not again come to you this night.' On saying which, she departed.

The man now remained alone, but did not treat the information he had received with indifference. He went to the gate leading to Ghent, where he found the guard playing at dice. 'Gentlemen,' said he, 'have you well fastened your gates and your barriers? for a woman came to me this night, and gave me notice of her having seen a body of Ghent men marching hither.' 'Yes,' replied they: 'our gates are fast enough: but may a scurvy night befal this woman, who has thus alarmed you at such an hour. There probably were cows and calves that had got untied, and these she fancied to have been Ghent men coming hither: they have not any such intentions.'

While this conversation was passing between the constable of the watch and the guard at the gate, Francis Atremen and his companions were executing their plan: they had got into the ditches, which were dry, as they had fished them this week, and had broken down a little of the pali-

sades

ſades near the wall, againſt which they had placed their ladders and had entered the town. They marched to the market-place without any noiſe, and continued ſo until they were all collected, when they met a knight, called ſir Florens de Halle, lieutenant-governor, who was there on guard with about thirty men at arms of the town. The Ghent men began to shout, 'Ghent, Ghent!' and to attack the guard whom they ſlew, as well as ſir Florens de Halle. Thus was Oudenarde taken. You may ſuppoſe that the inhabitants, who were ſleeping in their beds, were exceedingly aſtoniſhed when they heard theſe ſhouts and ſaw the town taken by ſcalado without having any remedy for it. Their houſes were forced open, and thoſe within ſlain; for they were ſo ſuddenly ſurpriſed, there was not any help for it. Thoſe who could eſcape did, leaving their houſes in a ſtate of nakedneſs, and leaping over the walls, ſaved themſelves by the ponds and ditches of the town. None of the rich men could carry any part of their wealth with them, but were happy if they ſaved their lives. This night great numbers were killed, or drowned in the ponds; and thus ended this expedition.

In the morning, when the Ghent men ſaw themſelves maſters of the town, they ſent out of it all the women and children in their ſhifts, or in the meaneſt dreſs they had. In this plight thoſe who had eſcaped got to Mons, Arras, Condé, Valenciennes or Tournay, in the beſt manner they could.

News was ſpread every where of the capture of

Oudenarde.

Oudenarde. The inhabitants of Ghent were greatly rejoiced at it, and ſaid that Francis Atremen deſerved to be highly prized for his valour. Francis Atremen remained governor of Oudenarde, where he gained great riches, with all ſorts of ſtores, which was a fortunate circumſtance for the captors, ſuch as corn and wines of all ſorts. Every thing fell into their hands, and all the wealth which was there from France, Flanders, and Tournay; but whatever belonged to Hainault was ſaved, nor was any part of that taken but what was duly paid for.

CHAP. LXIII.

AYMERIGOT MARCEL, AN ENGLISH CAPTAIN ON THE BORDERS OF AUVERGNE, TAKES BY STRATAGEM THE CASTLE OF MARQUEL.—THE COUNTESS DAUPHINE RANSOMS IT FOR FIVE THOUSAND FRANCS.

IN this ſame week an almoſt ſimilar adventure happened in Auvergne, where the Engliſh held ſeveral caſtles bordering on the territories of the count dauphin, and on thoſe of the biſhops of St. Flour and of Clermont. The Engliſh garriſons knew the country of Auvergne had been drained of men at arms, for the greater part of them were with the king of France in Flanders: they, in conſequence, began to lay plans for ſurpriſing ſome of the ſtrong places of Auvergne. Aymeri-

got

got Marcel, governor of Aloiſe, a handſome caſtle ſituated a league diſtant from St. Flour*, ſet off from his caſtle at day-break, attended only by thirty picked men. He marched ſilently for the lands of the count dauphin, having formed his plan to take by ſcalado the caſtle of Marquel (which the count dauphin bears for his arms), and rode through woods and a cloſe country. Aymerigot and his men took up their lodgings early in a ſmall wood near the caſtle, where they remained until ſun-ſet, and the garriſon had retired into the caſtle: while the governor, whoſe name was Girardon Buiſſel, was at his ſupper, the Engliſh, who knew well what they were to do, affixed their ladders and entered the caſtle at their eaſe.

Thoſe paſſing through the court ſaw them climbing over the walls, and inſtantly cried out, 'Treaſon, treaſon!' On Girardon hearing this, he had not any hopes of ſaving himſelf but through a private paſſage which led from his apartment to the great tower, and which ſerved as the dungeon of the caſtle. Thither he inſtantly retired, taking with him the keys of the gates, and ſhut himſelf in, whilſt Aymerigot and his companions were otherwiſe employed. When they diſcovered that the governor had eſcaped into the great tower, which they were unable to take, they ſaid they had done nothing, and re-

* St. Flour,—a city of Auvergne, ſituated on a mountain, generality of Riom.

pented greatly having thus incloſed themſelves; for, the gates being faſtened, they could not get out. Aymerigot having muſed a little, came to the tower, and, addreſſing the governor, ſaid; 'Girardon, give us the keys of the caſtle-gate, and I promiſe you we will leave it without doing any miſchief to the caſtle.' 'Indeed,' replied Girardon, 'but you will carry off all my cattle: how can I believe you?' 'Give me thy hand,' ſaid Aymerigot to him, 'and I ſwear to thee, on my faith, that thou ſhalt not ſuffer the ſmalleſt loſs.' Upon this, he like a fool, came to a ſmall window in the tower, and offered his hand for him to pledge his faith on; but the moment Aymerigot got hold of it, he pulled it to him, ſqueezing it very hard, and called for his dagger, ſwearing he would ſtick his hand to the wall unleſs he gave up all his keys.

When Girardon ſaw himſelf thus caught, he was ſtupified, as indeed he had reaſon; for Aymerigot would not give up his hand without nailing it to the wall, unleſs he received the keys. With his other hand, therefore, he gave the keys, for he had them near him.

'Now ſee,' ſaid Aymerigot to his companions, when he had got the keys, 'if I have not well cheated the fool: I am equal to many ſuch feats as this.' They opened the tower gate, and, being the maſters, put out of the caſtle the governor and all who were in it, without doing them any other harm.

News was carried to the counteſs dauphine, who

who reſided at a ſtrong caſtle in the good town of Zaides, a league diſtant, how the Engliſh had won Marquel. The lady was much ſurpriſed, and becauſe her lord, the dauphin was not in the country, ſhe immediately ſent to all the knights and ſquires who were at home, to requeſt they would aſſiſt her in recovering poſſeſſion of her caſtle. Knights and ſquires, on hearing this, inſtantly waited on the lady and laid ſiege to the caſtle; but the Engliſh were not alarmed and held the place for fifteen days. During this time the lady entered into a treaty, and Aymerigot received five thouſand francs in hard money, for which he and his men ſurrendered it and returned to his garriſon.

In another part thoſe of Caluiſel, of which Perrot le Brenois was captain, harraſſed much the countries of Auvergne and Limouſin. The Engliſh had at that time upwards of ſixty ſtrong caſtles on the borders of Auvergne, Limouſin and Quercy, and they could march from fort to fort, even unto Bourdeaux. But the caſtle which harraſſed the country the moſt, was Ventadour*, one of the ſtrongeſt caſtles in the world: the captain of it was a Breton, called Geoffry Tête noir. This Geoffry was a wicked man, ſhewed mercy to none, and would juſt as ſoon put to death a knight or ſquire as a peaſant: he held all

* Ventadour,—A caſtle in the dioceſe of Limoges, near Tulles.

men ſo cheap, and was ſo much feared by his ſoldiers that they dared not anger him.

He maintained in this caſtle full four hundred men, whom he paid regularly every month; and the whole country was under ſuch ſubjection and awe of him, that none dared to ride over his lands. His caſtle of Ventadour was more largely ſupplied with every ſort of ſtore than that of any lord. There were warehouſes of Bruſſels and Normandy cloths, of furs, merceries and other articles, which he ſold to his people, deducting the prices from their pay. He had ſtores of ſteel, iron, wax, ſpices and every neceſſary, in as great plenty as at Paris. Sometimes he made war on the Engliſh as well as on the French, in order to be the more dreaded: and his caſtle of Ventadour was always provided for a ſiege of ſeven years. We will now return to the affairs of Flanders.

CHAP. LXIV.

THE KING OF FRANCE ORDERS BOURBOURG TO BE ATTACKED.—IT IS SURRENDERED TO HIM BY CAPITULATION, WHEN THE ENGLISH QUIT FLANDERS.—HE THEN DISBANDS HIS ARMY.

WHEN the king of France came before Bourbourg there were never ſeen ſuch fine men at arms nor ſuch numbers as he had with him. The lords and their men were all drawn up, and eager for the attack. Thoſe who had reconnoitred the place ſaid, it could not hold

hold out long; but that it would coſt dearly in men: and ſeveral wondered why the attack was delayed. Some ſaid, that the duke of Brittany and the earl of Flanders, who were on the other ſide of the town, were treating with the Engliſh to ſurrender without waiting for the aſſault. On this the Bretons, Burgundians, Normans, Germans and others, who knew there was much wealth in the place, which, if taken by ſtorm, would probably fall to their ſhare, were much exaſperated at the thoughts of a capitulation, and began to ſkirmiſh with the infantry at the barriers, without waiting for orders from the conſtable or marſhals of the army: indeed, they were not forbidden to aſſault it. This ſkirmish increaſed ſo much that the French ſet fire to the town by means of fire-arrows and cannons, ſo that ſuch a flame and ſmoke came from the houſes of Bourbourg as might have been ſeen forty leagues off. The attack then began with shouts; and ſir William de Namur who, with his men, was in the front ranks, fought valiantly. Many gallant deeds were done, and the aſſailants leaped cheerfully into the mud of the ditches above the knees, when they engaged with the English at the paliſade and barriers.

The garriſon defended themſelves handſomely: indeed they had need of their exertions, for they knew not on which ſide to turn themſelves. They were attacked on all parts: and the houſes of the town were blazing with fire, which more confounded the English than any thing elſe. This, however,

however, did not throw them off their guard, nor cauſe them to quit their poſts. Sir Matthew Redman and ſir Nicholas Drayton, with their men, in the centre of the town, endeavoured to check the progreſs of the fire; but it was ſuch a dry ſeaſon, that the ſmalleſt ſpark ſet the houſes in flames. It is certain, that if the attack had begun earlier, or had not the night come on ſoon, the town muſt have been taken by ſtorm, but the approach of night put an end to it. Sir William de Namur's diviſion had thirty-ſix killed and wounded; and the army loſt, according to the report of the heralds, upwards of five hundred. On the attack ceaſing, the French retired to their quarters, to attend the ſick and bury the dead. They ſaid, that on the morrow they would renew the attack, and it ſhould be irreſiſtible.

The English, all this Saturday night, were employed in repairing the paliſadoes which had been broken, in putting all things in a good ſtate, and in extinguishing the fires in the town. They were in a moſt perilous ſituation, being ſurrounded on all ſides, without means of eſcaping by flight.

On the Sunday morning when the king had heard maſs, it was proclaimed through the army, that whoever ſhould bring a faggot to the king's tent ſhould receive a halfpenny, and as many faggots ſo many halfpence. Theſe faggots were intended to be thrown into the ditches, ſo that they might reſolutely paſs over them, and engage with the English, on the Monday morning at the paliſadoes,

paliſadoes. Upon this all the lower ranks, and the ſervants, began to make faggots and carry them to the king's tent, in ſo much that a very large heap of them was made there.

Sunday paſſed without any attack. Some ſay that on this day, and appearances confirmed it, the duke of Brittany, who was on the oppoſite ſide of the town to the king, entered into negotiations with the Engliſh, aware of the peril they were in. He adviſed them to ſurrender the town, on their lives and fortunes being ſpared. This they were very willing to do, and they entreated the duke, through love of God, and in honour of his gentility, to undertake the buſineſs.

The duke ſent information of what he had done to the king, his uncles, the conſtable of France, the count de St. Pol and to the council. Having conſidered how adviſable it was to gain all the ſtrong places in Flanders, in whatever manner they were offered to be ſurrendered, and that to win Bourbourg they muſt renew the attack, which would coſt them, probably, numbers of lives; beſides, they ſhould at laſt only conquer a handful of men, who would defend themſelves until they dropped; the king of France and his uncles replied, that, in God's name, they would willingly agree to a treaty, if the duke of Brittany and the conſtable of France would undertake it. In this manner Sunday paſt, without any thing being done. I heard that, in the evening, on a promiſe of ſafety, John de Châteauneuf, a Gaſcon, and Remonnet de St. Marc, came

came to the tent of the lord Guy de la Tremouille to play and amuſe themſelves, where they ſtaid all night. On the Monday-morning they returned to Bourbourg; and at their departure the lord Guy ſaid to them, 'John and Remonnet, ye ſhall both be my priſoners this evening.' They replied, they would prefer being his, than belonging to any other knight.

Intelligence arrived this Sunday of the capture of Oudenarde, which much vexed ſir Gilbert de Lieneghien the governor, as it had been loſt through his abſence; but he was exculpated from all blame by his lord the earl of Flanders, who had ſent for him. The count de Blois commanded the king's guard this Sunday, and every one thought the attack would be renewed on Monday: but in the morning it was proclaimed through the army, that the king forbade any attack until further orders. This proclamation made every one quiet; and ſeveral lords gueſſed that the Engliſh would eſcape by means of a treaty, as the attack was forbidden.

After dinner, thoſe who were to negotiate came out of the town, ſuch as ſir William Elmham, ſir Thomas Trivet, ſir Nicholas Drayton, ſir Matthew Redman and others, to the number of fourteen knights and ſquires, whom the duke of Brittany, the conſtable of France and the count de St. Pol, conducted to the tent of the king.

The king was much pleaſed thereat, as he had ſcarcely ſeen any Engliſh except ſir Peter Courtenay,

Courtenay, who had come to Paris to fight with the lord Guy de la Tremouille, but the king and his council had made up the quarrel. Now, as the Engliſh had been much renowned for gallantry and deeds of arms, the young king of France wiſhed to ſee them: and their treaty was much the better for it.

On the Monday this negotiation was carried on in the king's tent, and in his preſence. There were alſo preſent the dukes of Berry, Burgundy, Bourbon, Brittany, the earl of Flanders and the conſtable of France, and no more. The duke of Brittany was very active in this buſiness: and it was ſettled, that the Engliſh ſhould depart from Bourbourg and Gravelines, and carry away with them as much of their wealth as they could.

Several of the Bretons, French, Normans and Burgundians were much vexed at this treaty, for they thought of partaking of the ſpoils; but the king and his council had ordered it otherwiſe.

After the treaty had been ſigned, the Engliſh took leave of the king of France, his uncles, the duke of Brittany and the conſtable, and went with the count de St. Pol, who carried them to ſupper at his houſe, where he entertained them as handſomely as he could in ſuch a ſituation. After ſupper he had them conducted to the gates of Bourbourg, for which they teſtified to him their thanks.

The whole of Tueſday they employed in ſhoeing their horſes, and in packing up all their wealth, of which they had much, and in making preparations

preparations for their departure. On the Wednesday morning they loaded their baggage-horses and began their march, passing through the army with passports from the king. The Bretons were much exasperated when they saw them so loaded; and they treated very indifferently a few who tarried behind. Thus the English marched to Gravelines, where they halted. On the Thursday morning, when they left it, they set fire to the place, burnt it to the ground, and arrived at Calais with all their pillage. They stopped there to refresh themselves, and to wait for a favourable wind to return to England.

The king of France, and all the lords of his army with their attendants, entered Bourbourg on the Thursday morning, when the Bretons began to plunder it, without excepting even the church of St. John: in which church, a pillager having mounted on an altar, with the intent of forcing out a precious stone that was in the crown of an image made to represent the person of our Lady, the image turned about, and the pillager in his fright fell from the altar and was instantly struck dead. This is a certain truth, for many persons were witnesses of it. Shortly afterwards, another pillager came with a similar intent of robbing the image; but all the bells began a peal without any one touching them, for no one could have rung them, the bell-ropes being drawn up and fastened.

On account of these miracles, the church was visited by crowds. The king made a handsome present

preſent to it, as did all the lords, ſo that the amount of their gifts was upwards of three thouſand francs.

On Tueſday, the army began to decamp, and the king and conſtable gave permiſſion to ſeveral of the men at arms to return home. The king thanked thoſe who had come from diſtant parts, and in a particular manner the duke of Bavaria and the count of Savoy, who had come from ſuch a diſtance to ſerve him. Each lord now returned home, and the king went to France; but the duke of Burgundy ſtaid a ſhort time with his father-in-law the earl of Flanders, to regulate his affairs, and reſided at St. Omer.

The lord de Coucy, with many knights and ſquires from Ponthieu, Vimeu and Picardy entered Gravelines when the Engliſh had left it, repaired and greatly ſtrengthened it, and made it a garriſon as a frontier to Calais.

The countries of Furnes, Dunkirk, Dixmude and Nieuport were by degrees re-peopled. They had loſt every thing by this war, but they now began ſomewhat to recover themſelves.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXV.

THE BISHOP OF NORWICH AND THOSE WHO ACCOMPANIED HIM IN HIS EXPEDITION ARE BADLY RECEIVED ON THEIR RETURN TO ENGLAND.—CERTAIN GREAT PERSONAGES ARE DEPUTED TO NEGOTIATE A PEACE OR TRUCE BETWEEN THE KINGS OF FRANCE AND ENGLAND.—THE DUKE OF BAVARIA DIES.

YOU muſt know that the duke of Lancaſter was not very ſorry this expedition of the biſhop of Norwich had failed, for by it his intended voyage to Spain and Portugal had been fruſtrated. When theſe knights returned to England, they were attacked by the common people, who told them they had behaved very badly in their expedition, for, from the proſperity they had been bleſſed with at the beginning, they ought to have conquered all Flanders.

Sir Thomas Trivet and ſir William Elmham were more blamed than the reſt; but ſir Hugh Calverley was not any way found fault with, either by the king's council or the populace, for they well knew, that if they had paid attention to what he had adviſed, the event would have been more to their honour.

They laid to their charge, that they had ſold Bourbourg and Gravelines to the king of France, which exaſperated the people to a great degree, and

and they were at one time in danger of their lives. The king ordered thefe two knights to be confined in the tower of London, and during the time of their impriſonment the country was quieted: on their liberation, they threw themſelves on the king's mercy*.

At this time, negotiations were ſet on foot to conclude a truce between England and France, in which the Ghent men were to be included, to the great diſpleaſure of the earl of Flanders; but he could not help it. When the army decamped from Bourbourg, the duke of Brittany remained with his couſin the earl of Flanders at St. Omer, and was deſirous that a long peace or truce ſhould be eſtabliſhed between his lawful lord, the king of France, and the king of England. In order to make a beginning to ſuch buſineſs, he had mentioned the ſubject to ſome of the Engliſh knights, on the Monday, when they were in the king's tent before Bourbourg; which knights had promiſed, on their arrival in

* Writs were iſſued to the ſheriffs of London, Somerſet, Dorſet, Eſſex, Norfolk and Suffolk, to levy on the goods of ſir W. Elmham, for 3080 golden francs,—ſir W. de Farndon, 1400 ditto,—ſir Thomas Trivet, 1400 ditto,—ſir Henry de Ferrers, 6080 ditto,—Robert Fitzrauf, 300 ditto.

They were alſo to be taken into cuſtody; but no mention is made of the tower of London.

Robert de Foulmer, clerk, treaſurer to the biſhop of Norwich, was alſo impriſoned, and 5000 golden francs levied on his goods.

Dated 6th March,—pardoned 14th May.——Rymer, ann. 1384, ann. 7. Ric. II.

England,

England, to propoſe it to the king, his uncles and his council. However, to ſhew that this matter was quite agreeable to him, and that he was anxious about it, he ſent two of his knights to England under good paſſports.

Theſe knights, the lord de la Houſſaye and the lord de Mailly, managed matters ſo well that the duke of Lancaſter, the earl of Buckingham, the biſhop of Hereford, the lord John Holland, brother to the king, the lord Thomas Percy and others of the king's council were ordered to Calais, having full powers from the king of England to conclude a peace or truce, according to their pleaſure.

On the other hand, there came to Boulogne the duke of Berry, the duke of Burgundy, the biſhop of Laon and the chancellor of France, having alſo full powers from the king of France and his council to conclude either a peace or truce.

When aſſembled at Calais and Boulogne, they were delayed a ſhort time by the non-arrival of the deputies from Spain; for the French would not enter into any treaty that did not at the ſame time include the Spaniards. At laſt, a biſhop, a dean and two knights arrived on the part of the king of Spain.

As they were not empowered on either ſide to grant paſſports, that the negotiators from France might come to Calais, or the Engliſh go to Boulogne, it was ſettled between them, that the conference ſhould be transferred to a village that had a church

a church, half way between theſe two towns, above Buiſſem*, called Bolinges†. Thither all the parties went, and the lords, with their council, were together for many days. The duke of Brittany and the earl of Flanders were preſent, and the great tent of Bruges was pitched, wherein the earl entertained at dinner the duke of Lancaſter, the earl of Buckingham and the other Engliſh lords. Each negotiator kept up a grand ſtate; but, notwithſtanding there were many conferences holden, yet they could not agree upon a peace, for the French wanted the Engliſh to give up Calais, Guines, and all the fortreſses which they poſſeſsed in Normandy, Brittany, Poitou, Saintonge and la Rochelle, as far as the river Garonne.

But the Engliſh would not any way liſten to ſuch a propoſal; nor would they ever conſent to give back ſuch places as Calais, Guines, Cherbourg or Breſt. Theſe conferences laſted three weeks, in which they or their councils diſcuſſed theſe matters daily.

At this period, the gallant duke Winceſlaus of Bohemia departed this life, in the town of Luxembourg: he was in his time magnificent, blythe, prudent, amorous and polite; and, when he died, it was ſaid that the prince of the higheſt birth, of the moſt noble blood, and moſt numerouſly and honourably connected was gone. God have mercy

* Probably what is now Haut Buiſſon.

† Q. If not Bollinghem, now a village near Boulogne.

on

on his ſoul! He lies buried in the abbey of Vaucler, near Luxembourg. The lady Jane, his ducheſs, remained a widow, and never had any inclination to marry again. All who loved the duke were exceedingly concerned at his death.

CHAP. LXVI.

DURING THESE CONFERENCES THE GHENT MEN INSULT TOURNAY.—A TRUCE IS CONCLUDED BETWEEN THE KINGS OF FRANCE AND ENGLAND AND THEIR ALLIES.

WE will now return to the conferences which were holding between the lords of France and England, half way between Calais and Boulogne, at the before-mentioned village. Neither ſide ſeemed willing to accommodate the other. Some ſaid it was owing ſolely to the earl of Flanders, at the inſtigation of the town of Bruges, who would not conſent that the Ghent men ſhould be included in the treaty. This the Engliſh reſented, and of courſe the treaty was ſtopped; for they had formed ſo ſtrong a connection with Ghent, that they would not conclude a peace unleſs that place were included. They had ſworn to obſerve this during the time they were together at Calais, and this compact frequently interrupted the negotiations.

Since there ſeemed no probability of a ſolid peace being made, they propoſed a truce, and on this

this ground the conferences were continued. The earl of Flanders would willingly have had Ghent excluded, and remain in a ſtate of war, but the Engliſh abſolutely refuſed to conſent, ſo that a truce was made to comprehend Ghent, and every thing was to remain in its preſent ſituation, without any ſurrender of forts: Oudenarde and Gravelines therefore belonged to Ghent.

Notwithſtanding the conferences, the Ghent men in garriſon at Oudenarde marched to Tournay, burnt the ſuburbs, and returned back in ſafety with their pillage. About Chriſtmas the Ghent men went and received the rents of the lord d'Eſtournay in his own town, which made him very melancholy; and he ſwore to God, that if he would be pleaſed to aſſiſt him, whatever treaty or agreement ſhould be made between the country of Flanders and theſe men, he would never pay any attention to it, but would continue the war againſt them to the utmoſt of his power, for they had robbed him of his inheritance. He was ignorant how he ſhould live, if his friends in Brabant did not aſſiſt him, ſo completely had they plundered him.

With ſome difficulty, the lords who had held ſo many conferences at Bolinges concluded a truce between the kings of France and England and their allies. On the part of France was included all Spain, as well as Scotland. The king of France bound himſelf to ſend notice of this truce to the king and barons of Scotland as ſpeedily as poſſible; and the bearers of this in-

formation were to have paſſports for their ſafety, in going to and returning from Scotland through England.

On the part of the Engliſh were included all their allies and adherents, whereſoever they might be. Ghent was expreſsly mentioned in all their deeds, to the great diſpleaſure of the earl of Flanders. This truce was to laſt until the Michaelmas of the year 1384: and theſe commiſſioners were to ſee that the articles were duly obſerved, having full powers to enforce them. Public acts were made of each different article for the better obſervance of them; and the lords preſent ſwore they ſhould all be loyally kept, and in no way infringed.

CHAP. LXVII.

THE EARL OF FLANDERS DIES.—THE CEREMONY OF HIS FUNERAL.

ON the conference breaking up, the French lords returned to France, and the Engliſh lords to Calais. The duke of Brittany went back to his duchy, and the earl of Flanders to St. Omer. Shortly after, he was taken ſo ill that he died. It was ordered that he ſhould be buried in the church of St. Peter in Lille. The earl departed this life on the 20th day of January, in the year 1383, and his body was carried to Los, an abbey near to Lille. The body of the counteſs his lady, who had died five years before in the county of Rethel, was

alſo

alſo brought thither, and from thence to Lille, where they were interred together in the church of St. Peter.

I will now relate the arrangement of this ceremony, and the manner in which it was conducted, and deſcribe the order of proceſſion at the funeral of the earl and counteſs of Flanders, whoſe bodies had been carried to Los, an abbey near Lille. When they were about to enter Lille, a great number of lords from France, Flanders, Hainault and Brabant, who had arrived there the eve of the funeral, were to meet the body at the gate of the invalids, and to carry it through the town to the church of St. Peter. They were to be armed as for war, as well as their ſquires who ſupported them.

Sir John Haluin was neareſt the body, ſupported by Enguerrand de Volemie, and Roger de l'Eſpierre: then the lord de la Marque, ſupported by John de l'Eſpierre, and the lord Sauſée de Fretin; the lord de Mauvis, ſupported by Godfrey de Noille, and Henry de la Vacquerie. The names of thoſe appointed to the convoy were, ſir Peter de Bailleuf, near the body, ſupported by Guyot de Lompré, and John Louis lord of Lamberticourt: ſir Sohier de Gand advanced before ſir Peter de Bailleuf, ſupported by Hugart de Quinghen, and by Michael de la Quarrie: ſir John du Moulin advanced before ſir Sohier de Gand, ſupported by John de Quinghen and Haubequin le mareſchal. Next followed the banners of the bier; firſt, ſir Francis de Haſurquerque and ſir Gouſ-

ſain, le Sauvage in front; sir Lancelot de la Perſonne before sir Gouſſain, and sir John de la Helle before sir Lancelot de la Perſonne. Thoſe who bore the banners of the bier and convoy came next, sir Matthew de Hunieres, and before him sir John de Helles; lord des Aveaux and sir Cierchelart de la Barre before the above named lord des Aveaux; and sir John de Paris before Cierchelart. The names of thoſe barons who aſſiſted to carry the corpſe of the earl from the gate of the invalids, in proceſſion through the town of Lille, to the church of St. Peter: firſt, sir John de Vienne, admiral of France, on the right, and the lord de Guiſtelles on the left; sir Valeran de Ravenel on the right, the caſtellan de Diſquenieu on the left; the lord d'Eſtournay on the right, and sir Anſel de Salins on the left.

Thoſe barons who aſſiſted in bearing the corpſe of the counteſs of Flanders from the gate of St. Ladre to the church of St. Peter were, the lord de Sully on the right, and the lord de Châtillon on the left side of the body; sir Guy de Pontalliers, marſhal of Burgundy, on the right, sir Guy de Guiſtelles on the left; then sir Henry du Coing on the right, and the caſtellan of Furnes on the left.

I ſhall now mention the regulations on the day of the obſequies, which were performed in the church of St. Peter, the names of thoſe preſent as well as of the ſquires who ſupported the ſhields during the whole maſs, until the offertory: firſt, the duke of Burgundy by himſelf, and

and the firſt ſhield was borne before him, which ſhield was ſupported by the lord de Ravenal, by the lord de la Gouneuſe, by Labequin, de la Coutre, and by John de Pontalliers brother to the marſhal of Burgundy.

The ſecond ſhield was borne before my lord John of Artois, count d'Eu, and the lord Philip de Bar, by Valeran de la Sale and Leſclaus d'Annequin. Next followed the count de la Marche and the lord Philip d'Artois; the ſhield was borne by Gillon de Labert and Robin de Florigny. Then came ſir Robert de Namur, and with him his nephew sir William de Namur: the ſhield was borne by Chaux Bernard and Girard de Sternaille.

The ſhields of the convoy: the lord d'Anghien, and with him ſir John de Namur; the ſhield carried by Aillart de Ponthées and Henry de Moucy. Next followed ſir Eſne de Châtillon, and the lord de Fere; the ſhield ſupported by John de Heluin and Edward de Caſtron; then the lord d'Ancoing and the lord de Guiſtelles: the ſhield-bearers were Triſtan de Landres and John du Béart; then the lord de Moriennes and the lord de Silly: the ſhield borne by Freſingue and by Damas de Bucy.

Then came thoſe who were to make offerings of the war-horſes of the earl: firſt my lord de Châtillon and ſir Simon de Lalain, bailiff of Hainault. Theſe lords were on foot, and the horſe was armed and capariſoned; with the ſecond horſe were ſir Valeran de Ravenal and the caſtellan de Dixmude; with the third, ſir Hugh

de

de Melun and the lord d'Aucy: the lord de Burnel and the lord de Brumeu were with the fourth horſe.

Then came thoſe who were to offer the ſteeds of the convoy: firſt, sir Henry d'Ancoing and ſir Gerard de Guiſtelles; with the ſecond, the lord de Montigny and the lord de Raſenghien; the lord de la Haurade and the caſtellan de Furnes were with the third; and the fourth had the lord de Saugmelles and sir Rowland de la Clicque.

Next came thoſe who were to offer the earl's ſwords of war; my lord admiral of France bore the first, the lord de Rary the ſecond, the marſhal of Burgundy the third, the lord de Saint Py the fourth. The names of thoſe who offered the ſwords of the convoy: ſir William de Ponthieu bore the firſt, ſir William de la Trimouille the ſecond, the caſtellan of Ypres the third, and ſir Guy de Hâncourt the fourth.

Then came thoſe who offered the war-helmets of the earl; the lord de Mailly bore the firſt; the ſecond was borne by ſir William de Hornes and ſir Anſel de Salins: ſir John Doppem and the caſtellan of St. Omer had the third; and ſir Guy de Guiſtelles and le Galois d'Aunoy the fourth.

The helmets of the convoy were borne and offered as follows: the firſt by ſir Joſſe de Hallain and ſir Oliver de Guffy; the ſecond by the lord d'Yſebobecque and the lord de Lalain;*

* The third is not mentioned in any of my editions.

the

the fourth by ſir Triſtan du Bois and ſir John de Jumont.

Then came thoſe who offered the banners of war: the lord de Liſtrenaille offered the firſt, ſir Leoncel d'Airainnes the ſecond, ſir Gilés de la Gouneuſe the third, and ſir John de Luiſolom the fourth. The banners of the convoy were next offered: the firſt by ſir Orengois de Rely, the third* by ſir John de Diſqueniue and the fourth by ſir Vilaines de la Clicque.

Thoſe who, after the obſequies were ended, laid the body of the earl of Flanders in the earth were, ſir John de Vienne admiral of France, the lord de Guiſtelle, ſir Valeran de Ravenal, the caſtellan de Dixmude, the lord de Ray and ſir Anſel de Salins.

Thoſe who interred the body of the counteſs, conſort to the earl, were, ſir Guy de la Trimouille, the lord de Châtillon, the ſénéſchal of Burgundy, the lord Gerard de Guiſtelles, ſir Henry d'Antoing and the caſtellan of Furnes.

It ſhould be obſerved, that all who officially had entered the church of St. Peter at Lille, with the corpſe in the evening, remained there until the maſs of the morrow, as well thoſe knights who were armed as thoſe who bore the banners and the ſquires who led the horſes.

There were about four hundred men, clothed in black, appointed to carry the body of the earl and counteſs of Flanders, through Lille, to the church of St. Peter, and each of them bore a torch in his hand. Theſe four hundred men

* The ſecond is forgotten.

held

held their torches on the morrow in the church during maſs, and they were all of them officers in the principal towns or of the earl's houſehold.

The archbiſhop of Rheims celebrated the maſs, aſſiſted by the biſhops of Paris, Tournay, Cambray and Arras, and likewiſe by five abbots. There were in the church, during the obſequies, ſeven hundred candles or thereabouts, and each candle weighed one pound. On the catafalque were five banners: in the centre, the banner of Flanders; on the right, that of Artois; on the left, lower down, that of Boulogne; the fourth of Nevers, and the fifth of Rethel. The catafalque was emblazoned on the right ſide with the ſcutcheons of Flanders, and on the left with thoſe of Flanders and Brabant. Down the church were twelve hundred and twenty-six candles, similar to thoſe around the bodies.

There was not any lady or damſel preſent on the part of the duke or ducheſs of Burgundy except the lady of the governor of Lille.

A magnificent dinner was provided, and every knight and ſquire were gratuitouſly entertained the day and night of the obſequies; and all the black cloth they had worn was given to them.

After this ceremony, they all returned to their homes.

The duke of Burgundy placed in the garriſons and towns in Flanders, knights and ſquires, notwithſtanding the truce which had been made between France and England, and between their allies, for every one was on his guard. The duke of Burgundy then returned to France, but

the

the lady-ducheſs remained a considerable time in Artois.

CHAP. LXVIII.

THE EARLS OF NORTHUMBERLAND AND NOTTINGHAM RAISE A BODY OF ENGLISH TO MAKE AN EXCURSION INTO SCOTLAND.—AMBASSADORS ARE SENT FROM FRANCE TO SCOTLAND, TO NOTIFY THE TRUCES WHICH HAD BEEN MADE BETWEEN FRANCE AND ENGLAND.

YOU have before heard how the lords of France who had attended the conferences in Bolinge had engaged on their departure to notify the truces that had been made between them and the Engliſh, to the Scots and to the king of Scotland, ſo that any miſunderſtanding ſhould be prevented between the two countries.

The council of France, however, to ſay the truth, did not uſe all the diligence they ſhould have done; for they were to have ſent inſtant information of this truce, which they did not do. I know not how this happened, except it were owing to the duke of Burgundy being ſo much engaged by the death of his father-in-law the earl of Flanders, and taken up with the buſineſs of his obſequies, as you have heard related. He likewiſe did not imagine the Engliſh would have acted as they did; for, ſoon after Eaſter, the earls of Northumberland and Nottingham, and the barons of Northumberland, collected a body of about two thouſand lances

and

and six thouſand archers, with which they marched by Berwick and Roxburgh, and entered Scotland.

They burnt all the lands of the earl of Douglas and of the lord Lindſay, and left nothing unmoleſted as far as Edinburgh. The barons of Scotland were not appriſed of this invaſion, and took the affair much to heart, ſaying they would revenge it to the utmoſt of their power. They added, that the Engliſh ought to have been at peace with them according to what had been reported of the truce; but they knew not this for certain, as in fact it had not at that time been notified to them; and they well knew that they had not entered into any treaty with the Engliſh. The war was thus begun; and they had ſuffered in the firſt inſtance from it, which greatly diſpleaſed them.

Intelligence ſoon ſpreads abroad. It was known in Flanders, particularly at Sluys, from ſome merchants who had ſailed from Scotland, that the Engliſh had invaded that country, and that king Robert and his barons were collecting a numerous force to engage the Engliſh. It was alſo known in France that the Engliſh had taken the field, and they ſaid among themſelves that a battle muſt be the conſequence.

The dukes of Berry and Burgundy, and the king's council, hearing this news, ſaid it was fooliſhly done not to have notified the truce to Scotland, according to their promiſe. It was then ordered by the king, his uncles and his council, that ſir Hemart de Maſſé, a very prudent

dent knight, ſhould go to Scotland, properly authoriſed, and with him ſir Peter de Flamel; and a ſerjeant at arms of the king, who was of the Scots nation, and called Janequin Champenois, was likewiſe ordered to attend them, becauſe he was acquainted with the country and underſtood the language.

While theſe ambaſſadors were making their preparations, and the Engliſh overrunning Scotland, the news of which was ſpoken of everywhere, ſeveral men at arms from France who had fixed their reſidence at Sluys, not knowing where to offer their ſervices, as a truce was now eſtabliſhed between Flanders and England, reſolved to go to Scotland. They heard the news of this war between Scotland and England; and it was confidently ſaid at Sluys, that an engagement muſt very ſoon take place. Theſe men at arms, ſuch as ſir Geoffry de Charny, ſir John de Plaiſſy, ſir Hugh de Boulon, ſir Sainge de Villiers, ſir Garnier de Libourne, ſir Garnier de Guſſangin, ſir Odin de Motin, ſir Robert de Campignen, James de Montfort, John de Heluin, John de Mellez, Michael de la Barre, William Gobart, heard this information with pleaſure: they might amount to about thirty men at arms, knights and ſquires.

In order to advance their renown, they had determined among themſelves, ſince they knew not where to offer their arms, to hire a veſſel and ſeek for adventures with the Scots. This reſolution they followed, and having embarked all their arms and baggage, they themſelves

went

went on board and set sail from Sluys as soon as the wind became favourable.

They left their horses behind, on account of the dangers of the sea and the length of the voyage: besides, the mariners who conducted them knew they could not land at Edinburgh, Dunbar, nor any of the adjoining ports, on account of the English fleet, with the purveyances which followed the army, being masters of all the havens.

About this time the ambassadors from France arrived in England, and waited on the king and his uncles, who entertained them handsomely. They dissembled a little the first day, because they knew a war was carrying on in Scotland: but, on hearing their people had finished the business, they hastened the messengers from France, sir Hemart de Masse and the others, and, for their greater security, ordered some of the king's heralds to attend them through England, and to have all towns and castles opened to receive them. This being arranged, they set out on their embassy.

The French knights who had sailed from Sluys, by coasting the shores of Holland and England, and carefully avoiding the English fleets, arrived safely at a small sea-port in Scotland called Monstres*. The Scots who lived in

* Monstres. Mr. D. M'Pherson, in his excellent Geographical Illustrations of Scottish History, translates it Melrose; but I think it must be a mistake, as Froissart calls it, 'un petit port.' From what follows, it must be some small port near to Dundee; and I should suppose it to mean Montrose.

the

the town, hearing that the paſſengers were Frenchmen come thither to ſeek for deeds of arms, ſhewed them great kindneſs, and ſupplied them with every neceſſary to the utmoſt of their power. When theſe knights and ſquires had refreſhed themſelves for two days, and had gained ſufficient intelligence, they ſet out, mounted on hackneys and rode to Dundee, from whence, continuing their journey as well as they could, they came to Perth, a handſome town. The river Tay runs by it: there is a good ſea-port, from whence one may ſail to any part of the world. On their arrival at Perth, they learnt that the Engliſh had retired, and that the king and all the nobility of Scotland were aſſembled in parliament at Edinburgh. Upon this they reſolved to ſend ſir Garnier de Cuiſſangin and Michael de la Barre, to Edinburgh, to have a conference with the king and the nobles, to know if they could be employed, and to teſtify their good will, at leaſt, in coming from Flanders to Scotland: ſir Geoffry de Charny and the reſt were to remain at Perth until they heard how they had been received.

As they had reſolved, ſo was it executed: the ambaſſadors ſet out from Perth and came to Edinburgh, where the king was. The earl of Douglas was there, whoſe name was James, for ſir William, the preſent earl's father, was lately dead: there were preſent alſo the earls of Moray and Orkney, the lords de Verſi, Sutherland, Lindſay and his ſix brothers, who were all of them knights. Theſe Scots lords entertained

tained very handſomely the knights of France. Sir Garnier explained to the king and his barons the intentions of his companions, and their reaſons for coming to Edinburgh.

The ambaſſadors from France, ſir Hemart de Maſſé, ſir Peter de Flamel and Janequin Champenois, arrived with copies of the truces entered into between the kings of France and England; but the Scots having no inclination to accept of them, diſſembled, by ſaying that they had come too late, and that they ſhould not now pay any attention to them, for the Engliſh had juſt made a grievous war on the country. King Robert did every thing he could for their being accepted, ſaying, that in truth ſince they had been notified to them, they had not any pretence for a refuſal: this cauſed a difference between the king and the knights of his country.

The earl of Douglas, the earl of Moray, the children of Lindſay, and ſuch knights and ſquires of Scotland who wiſhed for war, held a ſecret meeting in the church of St. Giles at Edinburgh, were the French knights, ſir Garnier and Michael de la Barre, were deſired to attend. The Scots barons ſaid they would enter into a treaty with their companions, and they ſhould ſoon hear good news from them, but it muſt be kept ſecret. Upon this they returned to Perth, and related all they had ſeen and heard.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXIX.

THE BARONS AND KNIGHTS OF SCOTLAND, IN CONJUNCTION WITH SOME FRENCH KNIGHTS, UNDERTAKE AN EXPEDITION INTO ENGLAND WITHOUT THE KNOWLEDGE OF THE KING OF SCOTLAND, WHO SENDS A HERALD TO MAKE HIS EXCUSES TO THE KING OF ENGLAND.

SIR Geoffry de Charny and the other knights and ſquires were much pleaſed at this intelligence. Leaving Perth, they continued their march until they arrived at Edinburgh. They gave not the ſmalleſt hint of their expectations, and had not remained there twelve days when the earl of Douglas gave them a ſecret invitation to come to him, and at the ſame time ſent horſes to conduct them to his caſtle of Dalkeith. On the morrow after their arrival, he carried them to where the barons and knights of Scotland were muſtering their men. In three days time they amounted to upwards of fifteen thouſand on horſeback, all armed according to the uſual manner of the country. When the whole were collected, they ſaid they would make an inroad, and revenge themſelves on the Engliſh for the miſchiefs they had done.

They began their march through the woods and forests of their country, and entered Northumberland,

umberland, on the lands of the lord Percy, which they pillaged and burnt. They advanced further, and then returned through the estates of the earl of Nottingham and the lord Mowbray, to whoſe lands they did much damage. They paſſed by Roxburgh: for they had a very large booty with them, as well in men as in cattle, and returned to their own country without any loſs; for the English had been ſome time diſbanded, and could not be reaſſembled in time to oppoſe them: they were, therefore, obliged to ſuffer this inſult, as they had before given a ſimilar one to the Scots.

The king of Scotland could eaſily excuſe himſelf for this inroad, as he had been kept entirely ignorant of their aſſembling and march. Since the country was ſo inclined, it was not material that he ſhould know any thing about it; but ſuppoſing he had known it, and there had been no other treaties than thoſe which exiſted between the two countries, they would not have acted otherwiſe for him.

Notwithſtanding the barons of Scotland, with the French knights, had thus invaded England, ſir Hemart de Maſſé and ſir Peter de Flamel continued to reſide at Edinburgh, near king Robert: they allowed the Scots to act as they pleaſed, that it might not be ſaid, nor the English ſuppoſe, that it was through their fault, or thoſe of their country who had come with them, that the treaties had been infringed which had been concluded at Bolinghen by the nobles and council of France,

England

England and Caſtille. The king of Scotland and the ambaſſadors ſent each a herald to England fully inſtructed what they were to ſay.

When the heralds arrived in England, they found the whole country in motion, and eager to renew the war, by marching into Scotland. The duke of Lancaſter and earl of Cambridge were, however, anxious to go to Portugal and Caſtille in the courſe of the year, with a large body of men at arms and archers, under the power of one or both of them; for they conſidered themſelves as heirs by their ladies to all Caſtille, and they wiſhed to renew the war between the king of Portugal and the king of Caſtille. King Fernando was dead, and the Portugueſe had crowned his baſtard brother don John, a valiant man who wiſhed for a war with the Spaniards, but not without having ſuccours from England. Of this the duke of Lancaſter was well informed, but diſſembled his knowledge as well as he could, and endeavoured through his friends to prevent any forces being collected to carry on a war with Scotland. It was aſſerted, that the king of Scotland had refuſed to authoriſe the war which the French and Scots knights wiſhed for, and that the late expedition had been made without his knowledge.

The Scots herald on his appearance before the king of England and his uncles, well knowing his duty, threw himſelf on his knees, and requeſted that, as herald from the king of Scotland, he might deliver his meſſage.

The king and the nobles granted his requeſt:

he then declared why he had been particularly ſent by the king and the ambaſſadors from France, and excuſed them, by ſaying, that the king of Scotland had graciouſly received the embaſſy from France, and having aſſented to the treaties which the king of France had made, ſhould conform to the truce: that he had ordered, as ſtrongly as lay in him, his vaſſals to do the ſame; but that the borderers of Scotland, on the lands of the lord Percy and the earl of Nottingham, ſuch as the earl of Douglas, the earl of Mar his uncle, ſir Archibald, ſir Rame, ſir Peter, ſir William and ſir Thomas Douglas, all the brothers of Lindſay and Ramſay, with ſir William Seton, would not attend the parliament in which this treaty was agreed to, nor would they accept it; for they ſaid there had been ſuch damage done to their lands as was diſagreeable to themſelves and friends, which they would revenge the very firſt opportunity. Theſe lords, whom I have juſt named, collected their forces to invade England, but they never mentioned it to the king, nor to any of his houſehold, for they well knew he would not have conſented to it.

'They ſay, however, in Scotland, that England firſt began hoſtilities; that, my lords, you knew well a truce had been concluded beyond ſea; and that on your return from Calais, it ought to have been ſignified to us. They ſay likewiſe, that the ambaſſadors from France, when they paſſed through this country, were detained from coming to us as they were bound to do, and that you kept them too long here with your entertainments:

tertainments: on which accounts, this miſunderſtanding has happened between Scotland and England, urged on by thoſe who had long meditated it, and under ſhadow of diſſimulation the greater part of it has been effected. But my moſt redoubted and ſovereign lord, the king of Scotland, and the ambaſſadors from the king of France, who reſide at preſent with him, exculpate themſelves from any knowledge of the laſt expedition which the barons and knights of Scotland made into England, having been completely ignorant of it.

'Therefore, to redreſs all complaints and place things on a proper footing, I am ordered to ſay, that if you will conform to the treaties concluded beyond ſea through the diſcretion and wiſdom of the counſellors of the king of France and your own, and will agree that the truces laſt the time ſuch truces have been agreed to with my very redoubted and ſovereign lord the king of Scotland, he and his council will confirm them, and ſwear to keep and maintain them, out of reſpect to the king of France and his council, as well by himſelf as by his vaſſal; and upon this ſubject you will be pleaſed to give me your anſwer.'

The king of England and his uncles paid attention to the herald while he was ſpeaking, and willingly heard him. The duke of Lancaſter told him, that indeed he ſhould have an anſwer. They ordered him to remain in London, where he had had his audience, to wait the anſwer from the king of England.

CHAP. LXX.

THE TRUCES WHICH HAD BEEN MADE BETWEEN THE FRENCH, THE ENGLISH AND THEIR ALLIES, ARE PROCLAIMED IN SCOTLAND.—THE FRENCH KNIGHTS, ON THEIR RETURN FROM SCOTLAND, ARE IN GREAT DANGER FROM THE ZEALANDERS.

AT the end of two days, the council agreed on an anſwer. Sir Simon Burley, chamberlain to the king, drew it up: and by theſe means all diſputes were ſettled. To ſay the truth, the lords of England who had been at the conferences at Bolinghen had not acted very honourably when they had conſented to order their men to march to Scotland and burn the country, knowing that a truce would ſpeedily be concluded: and the beſt excuſe they could make was, that it was the French, and not they, who were to ſignify ſuch truce to the Scots.

The herald was told, that in God's name he was welcome, and that it was the intention of the king of England, his uncles and council, to keep and maintain what they had ſealed and ſworn to, and that they would no ways infringe it, but, on the contrary, would preſerve it, for thoſe who had been moſt active had loſt the moſt.

The herald demanded all this to be put in writing, that he might the more readily be believed.

lieved. They made him rich preſents, and in ſuch quantity that he was well contented, and greatly thanked the king and his nobles.

Having left London, he continued his journey until he arrived in Scotland, where the ambaſſadors from France were waiting to know his anſwer, for they were anxious to learn how the Engliſh would conduct themſelves. When they ſaw the anſwers from the king and his uncles, in the ſealed letters which were delivered to them, they were well ſatisfied and much rejoiced thereat. Thus was the truce continued for this year between England and Scotland, and for greater ſecurity it was proclaimed throughout the two kingdoms.

The French ambaſſadors returned to their own country, through England, without any accident, and related to the king of France and his uncles what they had done, and the oppoſition they had met with: in ſhort, they recounted every thing you have juſt heard.

What ſir Geoffry de Charny and the French knights in his company found that the truce was to be eſtabliſhed between Scotland and England, they took their leave of the barons of Scotland, more eſpecially of the earls of Douglas and Moray, who had ſhewn them much kindneſs.

Theſe barons of Scotland, as well as ſome other knights, ſaid to them, joking,—'Gentlemen, you have ſeen the condition and manner of our country, but you have not ſeen its whole ſtrength and power. Know that Scotland is the country of the world moſt dreaded by the Engliſh;

liſh; for we can, as you have ſeen, enter England at our pleaſure, without any danger from the ſea: if we were in greater numbers, we ſhould do them more miſchief than we are now able to do. Be ſo good therefore, when you are in France, to tell this to your knights and ſquires, who ſhall be eager for renown, to excite them to come hither in ſearch of deeds of arms. We can aſſure you, that if we had a thouſand lances from France, with the good people here, we would give ſuch a conſiderable blow to England that it ſhould be viſible for forty years to come. Have the goodneſs to remember this when you ſhall be on the other ſide of the water.'

The French knights replied they would not fail to do ſo, for it was not a thing to be forgotten. Upon this, they embarked on board a veſſel they had engaged to carry them to Sluys; but they had contrary winds when at ſea, which obliged them to run for a port in Zealand called la Virille*.

When they landed there, they thought they were in a place of ſafety, but were diſappointed; for the Normans had lately viſited that coaſt, and had done, as it was ſaid, much miſchief to the Zealanders. Theſe knights and ſquires were in great danger; for, while a different language was held in the town, their veſſel was ſeized, their trunks broken open, and their arms taken away, and they themſelves in riſk of loſing their lives.

* La Virille. Q. if not la Brille.

At that time there was in the town a ſquire of the count de Blois, whoſe name was Jacob, an agreeable man, who aſſiſted them in all things. He talked with the principal people of the town, and with ſuch good effect that a part of their baggage was reſtored to them.

In order to ſave them from their peril, for he knew the people were much enraged againſt them, and had intentions of attacking them on the ſea, as they had ſent notice of their plans to the neighbouring towns, and were in ſufficient force to do ſo, he ſhewed them much courteſy, and, out of affection to them, explained how greatly the country was exaſperated againſt them, but that, out of regard to his lord and the realm of France, he would counteract it. They warmly thanked him for his kind intentions. Well, what did Jacob do? He went to a mariner and hired a veſſel to carry him and his company wherever he pleaſed, ſaying his intentions were to go to Dordrecht. The mariners having agreed to this propoſal, he and his company embarked on board the veſſel, and at firſt made for Dordrecht; but, when Jacob ſaw it was time to alter their courſe, he ſaid to the ſailors, 'Now, mind what I am going to ſay: I have hired with my money this veſſel to carry me whitherſoever I ſhall pleaſe: turn, therefore, the helm for Strueghene*, as I want to go thither.' The ſailors refuſed to do ſo, ſaying they had been only engaged to ſail to Drodrecht.

* Strueghene. Q. Gertruydenbergh.

'Attend

'Attend to me,' replied Jacob; 'do what I have ordered you, if you do not wiſh to be put to death.'

The ſailors dared not make any reply, for they were not the ſtrongeſt; ſo they at once turned the helm and ſet the ſails, and made for the town of Eſtrimohee*, where they arrived without fear of danger, for it belonged to the count de Blois. After they had refreſhed themſelves, they departed and returned through Brabant and Hainault to their own country, thanking Jacob for the kindneſs he had done them.

When ſir Geoffry de Charny, ſir John de Plaiſſy and the other knights and ſquires who had been in Scotland, returned to France, they were interrogated as to news from that country. They related all they had ſeen and heard from the barons and knights of Scotland. Sir John de Vienne, admiral of France, converſed on the ſubject with ſir Geoffry de Charny, who was ſurpriſed, as well as other barons of France, to hear that the French, through Scotland, could gain an eaſy entrance into England. Sir Hemart de Maſſé continued the converſation, and added, the Scots could not any way love the Engliſh; and he had been directed to ſay this by order of the Scots council, that the king of France and his uncles might have information of it.

The French inſtantly determined, as ſoon as the truces ſhould be expired, to ſend a powerful

---

Eſtrimohee.

army to Scotland to lay waſte England. This was planned by the dukes of Berry and Burgundy, who at that time governed the realm at their pleaſure, and the conſtable of France; but the whole was kept very ſecret.

CHAP. LXXI.

THE LORD DESTOURNAY ASSEMBLES FORCES TO RETAKE OUDENARDE.—HE CONQUERS IT BY STRATAGEM.

YOU have before heard how Francis Atremen took by ſcalado the town of Oudenarde, while the treaties for a truce were negotiating before Bergues and Bourbourg, to the great ſurpriſe of Tournay and the adjacent towns. The garriſon of Oudenarde, during this time, had overrun the country: and done much miſchief to the territories of Tournay: the whole eſtate of the lord Deſtournay was under their ſubjection. They had at the feaſt of Chriſtmas collected his rents and duty-fowls, from the towns belonging to him, for their own uſe, which diſpleaſed him and his friends exceedingly. He therefore declared, that whatever truce or reſpite there might be between the kings of France and England with the Flemings, he ſhould not pay any attention to it, but would exert himſelf in doing them as much damage as he was able,

able, for they had ſo grievouſly oppreſſed him that he was become a poor man.

The lord Deſtournay turned his whole attention to retake Oudenarde, and ſucceeded through the friendſhip of ſome knights and ſquires from France, Flanders and Hainault, who aſſiſted him in it. When he ſent to theſe friends, ſeveral were ignorant of his intentions. The expedition was undertaken on the 17th day of May 1384; for the lord Deſtournay learnt by his ſpies, that Francis Atremen was gone to Ghent, truſting to the truce which had been made with the French: by ſo doing he committed a fault, and was no longer attentive to guard Oudenarde, as I ſhall relate.

The lord Deſtournay formed a conſiderable ambuſcade of four hundred knights, ſquires and good men at arms, whom he had entreated to aſſiſt him. Theſe he poſted in the wood of Lart, near to the gate of Oudenarde. There were among them ſir John du Moulin, ſir James de laTrimouille, ſir Gilbert and ſir John Cacquelan, ſir Roland de l'Eſpierre, ſir Blanchart de Calonne, and the lord d'Eſtripouille, who was created a knight.

I will now relate their ſtratagem, and how thoſe of Oudenarde were deceived by it. They filled two carts with proviſion, which they put under the charge of four hardy and determined men dreſſed as carters, clothed in grey frocks, but armed underneath. Theſe carters drove the carts to Oudenarde, and gave the guards to underſtand that they had brought proviſion from Hainault.

Hainault to victual the place. The guards not thinking but all was right, drew up the portcullis, and allowed them to advance on the bridge. The carters knocked out the pins which held the traces of the horſes, and flung them into the ditch. Upon this, the guards cried out to them, 'Why do not you drive on?' and taking hold of the horſes, drove them before them, and thus left the carts ſtanding, for, as I ſaid, they were unharneſſed. The guards then found out that they had been deceived and betrayed, and began to ſtrike the carters, who defended themſelves ably: for they were well armed under their frocks, and were men of tried courage. Having killed two of the guards, they were inſtantly reinforced; for the lord Deſtournay followed them ſo cloſe with his men, that the guards fled into the town, crying out, 'Treaſon, treaſon!' but, before the townſmen could be awakened, the men at arms had entered it, and killed all who put themſelves on their defence, ſhouting out as they came to the ſquare, 'Victory!'

Thus was Oudenarde won. Of the Ghent men, full three hundred were killed or drowned. A large ſum was found in the town belonging to Francis Atremen, which I heard amounted to fifteen thouſand francs.

News was ſoon ſpread abroad, that Oudenarde had been taken during the truce, which angered the Ghenters much, as was natural, for it nearly affected them. They held a meeting on this ſubject, and reſolved to ſend to the duke

duke of Burgundy to remonſtrate with him on the capture of Oudenarde during the truce, and to ſay, that if it were not delivered back to them they ſhould conſider the truce as broken. But the duke excuſed himſelf, declaring he had not interfered any way in the buſineſs, and that as God might help him, he was entirely ignorant of this expedition of the lord Deſtournay: he added, that he would willingly write to him, which he did, and order him to give back Oudenarde, for it was neither honourable to him nor agreeable to the duke to capture any towns, caſtles or forts during a truce.

The lord Deſtournay acknowledged the letters from the duke, and in anſwer ſaid, that the garriſon of Oudenarde had always made war on his lands, whether truce or no truce, and had ſeized on his inheritance, and that he had never conſented to any truce with them; that he had conquered Oudenarde in fair war, and that he would keep poſſeſſion of it as his own proper inheritance until Flanders and Ghent ſhould be completely re-united, for his other property had been ruined by the war.

Things remained in this ſtate, for nothing better could be done.

Francis Atremen was very much blamed for not having better guarded the place, and eſpecially by the lord de Harzelles, inſomuch that Francis was wroth with the knight, and high words enſued, adding, whatever he may have done in regard to Oudenarde, he had always acquitted himſelf loyally towards Ghent. This

provoked

provoked anſwers, and the lie was given on both ſides. Shortly after, the lord de Harzelles was killed; and ſome ſay that Francis Atremen and Peter du Bois were the authors of it.

About this time, the Ghent men requeſted the king of England to ſend them a valiant man for governor, and one who was connected with the crown by blood. In conſequence, the king ſent to Ghent one of his knights, a gallant man, of ſufficient prudence to govern the town: his name was ſir John Bourchier*, who remained governor of Ghent upwards of a year and half.

CHAP LXXII.

THE DUKE OF ANJOU DIES AT A CASTLE NEAR NAPLES. HIS WIDOW IS ADVISED TO SOLICIT THE POPE FOR THE POSSESSION OF PROVENCE.

YOU have before heard how the duke of Anjou, who ſtiled himſelf king of Sicily and Jeruſalem, had marched into la Puglia and Calabria, and had conquered the whole country as far as Naples: but the Neapolitans would never turn to his party, and continued the ſupport they had always given to the lord Charles Durazzo. The duke of Anjou remained on this expedition three whole years; you may ſuppoſe, therefore, that his expences were very great, for

* Sir John Bourchier. Lord Bourchier of Eſſex. See Dugdale.

there

there is no treaſury, however rich, but men at arms will drain it: whoever is deſirous of their ſervices muſt pay them well, if they expect any advantage from them. It muſt certainly have coſt the duke immenſe ſums of money; but thoſe who ſunk his treaſury the deepeſt were the earl of Savoy and the Savoyards. That earl, however, and a great many of his knights, died on this expedition, which weakened the duke of Anjou in men. It was on this account that he ſent to France to implore the aſſiſtance of his brothers the dukes of Berry and Burgundy, who did not fail him in his neceſſities, but replied that they would ſupport him with men and money.

Theſe two dukes conſidered who would be the proper perſons to ſend on this expedition. After having maturely weighed every thing, they thought they could not fix better than on the gallant lord de Coucy and the lord d'Anghien, count de Converſano*, whoſe earldom is ſituated in la Puglia.

Theſe two lords, having been ſolicited to undertake the buſineſs by the king of France and his uncles, cheerfully complied, for it was highly honourable to them. They inſtantly began their preparations, and ſet off as ſpeedily as poſſible with a handſome company of men at arms: but when they arrived at Avignon, and were buſily employed in forwarding their troops and other buſineſs, certain intelligence was brought

* Converſano is a town in the Neapolitan dominions, near Bari: its biſhoprick is ſuffragan to Bari.

them

them of the death of the duke of Anjou at a caſtle near Naples*.

The lord de Coucy, on hearing this, advanced no further, ſeeing that the expedition was at an end; but the lord de Converſano continued his march, for he had many things to ſettle in his own country, in la Puglia and in Converſano.

This intelligence was ſoon known in France to the king and his uncles, who ſupported the death of the king of Sicily as well as they could.

When madame d'Anjou, who reſided at Angers, heard of the death of her lord, you may imagine ſhe was greatly afflicted. The count Guy de Blois her couſin-german, who lived at Blois, on receiving the news, ſet out with all his equipage to viſit her at Angers, where he remained a conſiderable time comforting and adviſing her to the beſt of his abilities.

From thence the queen came to France (for ſhe ſtiled herſelf queen of Naples, Sicily, la Puglia, Calabria and Jeruſalem) to wait on the king and the dukes of Berry and Burgundy, to have their advice and comfort: ſhe was accompanied by her two ſons, Louis and Charles. The lady was adviſed by the nobles of her blood, to go to Avignon, and entreat of the pope that ſhe might have poſſeſſion of Provence, which is a territory dependant on Sicily. The queen

* He died at Biſélia, near Bari, the 20th or 21ſt September 1384.—*Art de Verifier les Dates.*

The authors of the Nouvelle Dictionnaire Hiſtorique, by miſtake, have placed his death at Paris, but with the ſame date.

approved

approved the advice, and made preparations for her journey, carrying with her her eldeſt ſon Louis, who was every where on the road called king, from being heir to the king his father; but theſe affairs were not ſo ſpeedily terminated as I have pointed them out.

CHAP. LXXIII.

PREPARATIONS ARE MADE IN FRANCE FOR THE RENEWAL OF THE WAR WITH ENGLAND.—THE DUCHESS OF BRABANT SUCCEEDS IN FORMING A MARRIAGE BETWEEN THE CHILDREN OF BURGUNDY AND THOSE OF HAINAULT.

DURING the winter, the French were buſily employed in preparations to ſend forces to Scotland; but the truces were prolonged between the French and Engliſh, and their allies, from Michaelmas to the enſuing firſt day of May. They, however, continued their preparations by ſea and land, for it was the intention of the council of France to carry on the war with vigour in the courſe of the next ſummer; and the admiral of France was to ſail for Scotland with two thouſand ſpears, knights and ſquires. On the other hand, the duke of Bourbon and the count de la Marche were ordered into Languedoc, Limouſin and Auvergne, with two thouſand men, to recover certain

tain caſtles which the Engliſh and pillagers held, and which did much miſchief to the country.

Great numbers of battle-axes were ordered to be made in Picardy and Hainault for the expedition into Scotland; and in Artois, Lille, Douay and Tournay, much biſcuit was made, and various other ſtores got ready along the coaſt from Harfleur to Sluys, which was the principal harbour whence this armament was intended to be embarked.

The ducheſs of Brabant, widow of Wenceſlaus duke of Bohemia, by whoſe death ſhe had loſt a companion and much comfort, which had cauſed her great grief, reſided with her attendants at Bruſſels. She was much hurt at the troubles which exiſted in Flanders, and, if ſhe had poſſeſſed the means, would moſt cheerfully have put an end to them; for ſhe was daily hearing how the Ghent men were ſtrengthening themſelves by an alliance with the Engliſh, who promiſed them great ſupport. She alſo ſaw that her nephew and niece of Burgundy, who were in truth her heirs, and among the greateſt princes of the world, as well by their own heritages, as by what they had in reverſions, were very uneaſy at theſe diſturbances in Ghent. She knew that duke Albert, regent of Hainault, had two fine ſons and two handſome daughters, neither of whom were yet married; but ſhe had heard that the duke of Lancaſter was very deſirous to accompliſh the marriage of his daughter Philippa, who had been borne to him by the lady Blanche his firſt wife, with the eldeſt ſon

of duke Albert, who, by his own right, was heir to the countries of Hainault, Holland and Zealand.

This lady foreſaw, that if ſuch an alliance ſhould take place between Hainault and England, the French would be much hurt, and the fair country of Hainault harraſſed either ſecretly or openly, by all thoſe who ſhould paſs and repaſs from France to Flanders. In addition to this, the Hollanders and Zealanders who bordered on the ſea aſſiſted the Ghent men in various ways, of which the duke of Burgundy and his council had been informed. He did not love duke Albert the better for this; not, however, that he was any way to be blamed for it; for with regard to the Hollanders and Zealanders, as the war in Flanders no way concerned them, he could not, neither ought he to have forbidden the free courſe of commerce.

The good lady having conſidered all theſe things, and the dangerous conſequences which might enſue, reſolved to bring the duke of Burgundy and duke Albert to a good underſtanding, and offered herſelf as guarantee of all the treaties. She was determined alſo to prevail on the duke of Burgundy to receive the men of Ghent into his mercy.

Clerks and meſſengers were immediately ſet to work: and ſhe managed ſo well that a conference was fixed to meet at Cambray on the part of the two dukes. They both aſſented to it, as well as their council, though neither of them knew the ſubjects this conference was to treat of.

To

To this conference, which they had under their ſeals appointed to be holden at Cambray on the twelfth day in the enſuing January, the two dukes came, attended by their councils. The ducheſs of Brabant came thither alſo, who was the mover in the buſineſs. She firſt addreſſed the duke of Burgundy, ſaying; 'He was the greateſt prince on earth, and had very fine children: ſhe, however, would be more happy if they were placed in a different ſituation from what they actually occupied, which would increaſe their worth; and, for the preſent, ſhe could neither ſee nor point out any better place than Hainault, Holland and Zealand, which would unite the whole country together, and give greater fear and alarm to its enemies; for, fair nephew,' added ſhe to the duke of Burgundy, 'I know for a truth, that the duke of Lancaſter, who is ſo powerful in England, is extremely anxious for his daughter to eſpouſe my nephew, William of Hainault, and I certainly wiſh ſuch good fortune may fall to your children rather than to the Engliſh.'

'My good aunt,' replied the duke of Burgundy. 'I return you my thanks, and, as a proof that I believe you, I ſhall allow you to unite my daughter Margaret with the youth of Hainault.' Upon ſuch good ſucceſs, ſhe inſtantly began to treat of this marriage. Duke Albert, to whom the propoſition was quite new, replied very courteouſly, but ſaid, he had not with him thoſe whom he wiſhed to conſult on the ſubject. 'And what advice do you want?'

anſwered the ducheſs, 'when it is a queſtion to act properly, and keep your country in peace.' 'My wife,' replied the duke; 'for without her I ſhall do nothing: ſhe is as much intereſted in my children as I am; and, beſides, fair aunt, it will be proper that the nobility of the country be appriſed of it.' The ducheſs anſwered, 'Well, God's will be done.' She thought the beſt ſhe could now do was to let them ſeparate in good humour with each other, and deſire they would permit her to call them again together in the ſame city during Lent, and that they would bring the ducheſs of Burgundy and madame de Hainault, with their councils, along with them.

The lady acted in all this ſo ſecretly, that very few perſons knew any thing of the matter, nor why this conference had been holden. In this ſtate the two dukes left Cambray: the duke of Burgundy went to the city of Arras, where his lady was, and duke Albert returned to his ducheſs in Holland.

The ducheſs of Brabant returned to her own country, and continually wrote to each party, but ſecretly. She had great difficulty to bring them and their ladies to Cambray, and laboured hard at it; for ſhe was very eager this marriage ſhould take place, to confirm the union and friendſhip of Flanders, Brabant and Hainault. The ducheſs managed ſo well that the different parties and their councils met her and her council at Cambray, where was a grand diſplay of pomp, for each was anxious to do honour to the other.

The

The ducheſs Margaret of Burgundy and the ducheſs Margaret of Hainault were preſent, and the laſt very active in this buſineſs. She ſaid, that if they wiſhed to marry their ſon with Margaret of Burgundy, John of Burgundy muſt marry her daughter, by which the ties of affection would be the more ſtrengthened.

It was much againſt the inclination of the duke of Burgundy to marry his children at once and to the ſame family. He thought it ſufficient for his daughter to marry the heir of Hainault, and excuſed himſelf for not agreeing to the marriage of his ſon John, on account of his youth. The duke's intention was to marry him to Catharine of France, ſiſter to his nephew the king of France. Theſe treaties and conferences were, therefore, on the point of being broken; for the ducheſs of Bavaria declared, a marriage should never take place with her children, unleſs they were both married at the ſame time; and this reſolution she kept, notwithſtanding all they could ſay to make her alter it. The ducheſs of Brabant took great pains in going from one to the other, and in preventing the treaties from being broken off: she at last ſucceeded, by reaſoning properly with the duke and ducheſs of Burgundy, to bring the affair again under conſideration: and it was then agreed that the marriages should take place between the children of the duke of Burgundy and thoſe of duke Albert.

This buſineſs had been delayed four or five days by an obſtacle which had ariſen from the council of the duke of Burgundy, who ſtated that

that duke Albert had only a reverſionary intereſt in Hainault, for his elder brother William was then alive, though dangerouſly ill at Queſnoy, and he might ſurvive his brother, and if that should happen, it was clear his other brothers would have the government of Hainault, and the children of duke Albert be driven from thence. This obstacle delayed the marriages a short time, which was employed in proving that duke Albert had no other brother but William, and that the country of Hainault must deſcend to him and to his children.

When all this was cleared up, there was not any longer delay, but the marriages were concluded and ſworn to for William of Hainault to have for his wife Margaret of Burgundy, and John of Burgundy to eſpouſe Margaret of Hainault. They were all to return to Cambray the octave of Easter, in the year of grace 1385, to perform the ceremonies of the marriages.

CHAP. LXXIV.

THE KING AND THE NOBLES OF FRANCE AND HAINAULT LAY IN GREAT PROVISION OF STORES AT CAMBRAY.—THE DUKE OF LANCASTER SENDS AMBASSADORS TO THE EARL OF HAINAULT.—THE MARRIAGES OF THE CHILDREN OF BURGUNDY AND HAINAULT ARE CONCLUDED.

THINGS were in this ſtate when they all left Cambray. The duke of Burgundy returned

turned to the king in France; the ducheſs to Arras. Duke Albert and his ducheſs went to Queſnoy in Hainault; and the ducheſs of Brabant to her own country. Carpenters and maſons, and all ſorts of workmen, were instantly ſent to prepare hôtels in the city of Cambray, and purveyors were alſo ordered thither to lay in vast quantities of proviſion; it was proclaimed, that every store was to be delivered into the city the week before the octave of Easter.

When the king of France heard of this, he ſaid that he would be preſent at the marriages of his couſins; and commanded his mâitres d'hôtels to lay in there ſuch proviſion as was beſitting him.

The palace of the bishop had been retained for the duke of Burgundy, and was already preparing for him; but it was neceſſary to give it up to the king, and workmen were ſet to embellish it in a royal manner, as it appears at this day: for never was there a feast in the memory of man, nor for theſe last two hundred years, that had ſuch grand preparations made for it. The nobility, in order to appear with the most pomp and magnificence, were no more ſparing of their money than if it had rained gold on them: and each endeavoured to outshine the other.

Intelligence of theſe marriages was carried to England, and how the dukes of Burgundy and Albert intended uniting their children together. The duke of Lancaster (who had nourished the hope that William of Hainault would chooſe his

his daughter, at least he had ſo been given to understand) was penſive and melancholy at this news; in order to be better aſſured of it, he determined to ſend, as ambaſſadors, knights and ſquires of his houſehold to Ghent, with inſtructions to talk with duke Albert on the ſubject. When they arrived at Ghent, they found there the lord Bourchier, Francis Atremen and Peter du Bois, who entertained them handſomely for two or three days. They then departed and went to Mons in Hainault; from thence to Queſnoy, where duke Albert reſided and waited on him. The duke, the ducheſs, and their children, in honour of the duke of Lancaſter received the Engliſh very politely, and the duke entertained them well, as did the lord de Gouvingen.

The maſter of the wool-ſtaple of all England, being one of the envoys, delivered his credential letters, and ſpoke firſt. He ſtrongly recommended the duke of Lancaſter to his couſin duke Albert, and then began on the ſubjects with which he had been charged. Among other topics, as I have been informed, he aſked the duke if it were his intention to perſevere in the propoſed union of his children with thoſe of the duke of Burgundy. This ſpeech moved a little the duke's choler, who replied, 'Yes, ſir, by my faith do I: why do you aſk?' 'My lord,' ſaid he, 'I mention it becauſe my lord of Lancaſter has hitherto had hopes that the lady Philippa, his daughter, would have been the wife of my lord William your ſon.' Upon this, duke Albert ſaid,—'My friends, tell my couſin, that

that when he marries any of his children, I ſhall never interfere: he therefore need not trouble himſelf about mine, nor how I marry them, nor with whom, nor when.' This was the only anſwer the Engliſh had from duke Albert. The maſter of the ſtaple and his companions took leave of the duke after dinner and went to Valenciennes, where they lay that night: on the morrow they returned to Ghent. More of them I know not, but I believe they returned to England.

Easter was the time fixed for the king of France, the dukes of Burgundy, of Bourbon, the duke Albert with the ducheſs his lady, the ducheſſes of Burgundy and of Brabant, ſir William and ſir John de Namur, to be at Courtray. The king reſided in the biſhop's palace, and each lord and lady at their own hôtels. You may eaſily imagine, that where the king of France was and ſo many of his nobles, there would alſo be the flower of his knighthood.

The king arrived at Cambray on the Monday by dinner-time. All the nobles and ladies, having preceded him, went to meet him out of his city; into which he was eſcorted, and conducted to the palace, to the ſound of numerous trumpets and minstrels. On Monday, the contracts of marriage were ſigned in the preſence of the king and his nobles. The lord William was to poſſess from thenceforward the county of Ostrevant*, and the lady Margaret

* Oſtrevant, or iſland of St. Amand. This was formerly a part of the country of Valenciennes. It lies on the borders of Flanders and Artois.—BAUDRAND.

his

his wife was to have the whole territory and castlewick of Arque* in Brabant: the duke of Burgundy gave beſides to his daughter one hundred thouſand francs. Thus were the portions ſettled.

On Tueſday, at the hour of high maſs, they were married, in the cathedral church of our lady in Cambray, with great ſolemnity, by the bishop of Cambray, whoſe name was John, and a native of Bruſſels.

There was a very magnificent dinner at the palace, to which were invited many of the great nobles. The king of France had the bridegrooms with their brides ſeated at his table. Several of the principal lords ſerved the king and his gueſts, mounted on large war-horſes. The conſtable and the admiral of France were ſeated at table. Sir Guy de la Trimouille and ſir William de Namur ſerved, with many other great barons of France.

There had not been, for five hundred years, ſo magnificent or renowned a ſolemnity ſeen in Cambray as was that of which I am now ſpeaking.

After this noble and grand dinner, great numbers of lords and knights armed and made themſelves ready for the tournament. It was held in the market-place, and there were forty knights. The king of France tilted with a knight from Hainault called ſir Nicholas d'Eſpinoit.

This tournament was very handſome: the

* Q. if not Ath.

tilts

tilts were well performed and lasted a conſiderable time: a young knight, called ſir John Deſtrenne, from near Beaumont in Hainault, won the prize. This knight tilted to the ſatisfaction of the lords and ladies, and received as the prize a claſp of precious ſtones, which the ducheſs of Burgundy took from her breaſt; and the admiral of France and ſir Guy de la Trimouille preſented it to him.

Theſe feaſts and amuſements continued until Friday, when they took leave of the king after dinner; and the king, the lords and the ladies departed from Courtray. The ducheſs of Burgundy carried with her, to Arras, Margaret of Hainault, her daughter-in-law: and madame de Hainault carried madame Margaret of Burgundy to Queſnoy. Thus ended all this buſineſs.

CHAP. LXXV.

THE DUKE OF BERRY BETROTHES HIS DAUGHTER TO THE SON OF THE COUNT DE BLOIS. —THE DUKE OF BOURBON AND THE COUNT DE LA MARCHE ISSUE THEIR SUMMONS TO INVADE LIMOUSIN.

ABOUT this time there was a treaty of marriage between Louis de Blois, ſon of the count Guy de Blois, and the lady Mary de Berry, daughter of the duke of Berry. The count de Blois carried his counteſs and his ſon Louis, well attended by lords and ladies, to Bourges

Bourges in Berry, where the duke and ducheſs were waiting for them, who received them and their company moſt magnificently. Every thing was there ſettled reſpecting this marriage, and the archbiſhop of Bourges betrothed them in the preſence of a large company of nobility of both ſexes. The marriage was not ſolemniſed at that time, becauſe both were very young; but all the contracts and engagements were ſigned, as to its future completion, in the preſence of ſeveral great barons and knights.

There were, at this betrothing, great feaſts of dinners, ſuppers, dancings and carollings; after which, the count and counteſs returned with their ſon to Blois. The young lady remained with the ducheſs her mother, at a handſome caſtle in Berry called Mehun ſur Yevre *.

At this time, the duke of Berry ſet out for Auvergne, Languedoc and Avignon, to viſit pope Clement. It had been before determined that the duke de Bourbon and the count de la Marche ſhould enter Limouſin, with two thouſand men at arms, to free the country from the Engliſh thieves, who were pillaging it; for there were ſtill ſome caſtles in Poitou and Saintonge whoſe garriſons did much miſchief; and, complaints of them having been made, the duke of Berry was deſirous of providing a remedy for them.

He had therefore entreated his couſin the

* Mehun ſur Yevre,—four leagues from Bourges.

duke

duke of Bourbon to undertake it, and not to quit Limouſin or Saintonge until he ſhould have conquered the caſtle of Vertueil: for it was from that garriſon the country had ſuffered the moſt. The duke de Bourbon accepted the command, and iſſued his ſummons for the aſſembling of his vaſſals at Moulins, in the Bourbonois, the firſt day of June. From thence they marched towards Limoges, and were met by ſeveral bodies of men at arms. The duke de Bourbon had at that time for his ſquire an amiable gentleman called John Bonne Lance *, maſter and captain of his men at arms. Of all the flower of his knights and ſquires, certainly this ſquire was well worthy of ſuch a command.

The count de la Marche was to accompany the duke de Bourbon in this expedition, and made his preparations in the town of Tours.

* Bonne Lance. I ſuſpect this is a *nom de guerre*, for no mention is made of him under this name in the life of the duke.

CHAP. LXXVI.

SIR JOHN DE VIENNE, ADMIRAL OF FRANCE, SAILS TO SCOTLAND, TO CARRY ON THE WAR AGAINST THE ENGLISH AT THE EXPIRATION OF THE TRUCE.

AT this period, thoſe men at arms who had been fixed on to accompany ſir John de Vienne, admiral of France, to Scotland, arrived at Sluys in Flanders. He was to have under his command a thouſand lances, knights and ſquires, and, I believe, they were all there: for ſuch was the ardour of thoſe who wiſhed to advance themſelves, that ſeveral went with the admiral though they had not been ſummoned.

The fleet was ready prepared at Sluys, and the ſtores in great abundance and good. They embarked arms ſufficient for twelve hundred men from head to foot. Theſe they had brought from the caſtle of Beauté, near Paris, and they were the arms of the Pariſians, which had been ordered to be depoſited there. With the admiral were plenty of excellent men at arms, of the flower of knighthood. It was the intention of the admiral to give theſe arms to the knights and ſquires of Scotland, the better to ſucceed in their enterpriſe; for ſir Geoffry de Charny and the others had told the king on their return home laſt year, that the Scots were very poorly armed.

I will

I will now name ſome of thoſe lords of France who went into Scotland. First, ſir John de Vienne, admiral of France, the count de Grand-pré, the lords de Verdenay, de Sainte Croix, the lord de Montbury, ſir Geoffry de Charny, ſir William de Vienne, ſir James de Vienne, lord d'Eſpaigny, ſir Girard de Bourbonne, the lord de Hetz, ſir Florimont de Quiſſy, the lord de Marnel, ſir Valeran de Rayneval, the lord de Beauſang, the lord de Wainbrain, the lord de Rinolle, baron d'Yury, the lord de Coucy, ſir Perceval d'Ameual, the lord de Ferrieres, the lord de Fontaines, ſir Bracquet de Braquemont, the lord de Grandcourt, the lord de Landon, a Breton, ſir Guy la Perſonne, ſir William de Courroux, ſir John de Hangiers, ſir Bery de Vinſelin, couſin to the grand master of Pruſſia, and many other good knights whom I cannot name: there were a thouſand lances, knights and ſquires, without reckoning the croſs-bows and sturdy varlets.

They had favourable winds and a good voyage; for the weather was very fine, as it uſually is in the month of May. The truces had expired between the French and Engliſh, the Ghent men and the Flemings, and in all other parts. War was ſought for, as it ſeemed, in every quarter; and thoſe knights and ſquires who went to Scotland gallantly wiſhed for it, as they ſaid, with the aſſiſtance of the Scots they would make a good campaign, and carry on a ſucceſsful war against England. However, the Engliſh,

Engliſh, who had received intelligence of this expedition, very much ſuſpected whither it was bound.

CHAP. LXXVII.

THE PILLAGERS OF GHENT, SURNAMED PORKERS, COMMIT MUCH MISCHIEF.—FRANCIS ATREMEN DEFEATS SOME FRENCH TROOPS NEAR ARDEMBOURG.

THE lord Bourchier, who had the government of Ghent by order of the king of England and the captains of the commonalty, Francis Atremen, Peter du Bois and Peter le Nuitre, had made every preparation, knowing the war was to be renewed. They had been very buſily employed during the truce, in ſtrengthening and victualling the town of Ghent, as well as the caſtle of Gauvre and all other places under their obedience.

At this period, there were a ſet of vagabonds who had taken refuge in the wood of la Reſpaille, and had fortified themſelves in a houſe ſo ſtrongly that it could not be taken. They had been driven out of Aloſt, Grammont and other towns in Flanders: having waſted their all, and not knowing how to live otherwiſe than by plunder, they robbed and pillaged any one who fell in their way.

The

The ſubject of univerſal converſation was theſe Porkers of la Reſpaille, which wood is ſituated between Regnais, Grammont, Anghien, and Lyſines. They did much miſchief in the caſtlewick of Ath, and on the lands of Floberge, Lyſines and Anghien; and theſe pillagers were ſupported by Ghent. Under their countenance they committed many murders and robberies: they entered Hainault, from whence they dragged people out of their beds, and carried them to their fort, when they ranſomed them, and thus made war on all mankind.

The lord de Baudrius and de la Morte, caſtellan of Ath, watched them ſeveral times, but he could never catch them, for they were too well acquainted with the means of eſcaping. They were ſo much dreaded on the borders of Hainault and Brabant that none dared to travel thoſe roads, nor through that part of the country.

The duke of Burgundy, in conſequence of the renewal of the war, had reinforced the garriſons of his towns and caſtles in Flanders with men and ſtores. The lord de Guiſtelles was commander in Bruges, and ſir John de Jumont in Courtray: for ſir William de Namur was at that time lord of Sluys: ſir Roger de Guiſtelle governed Damme, and ſir Peter de la Sieple Ypres. Men at arms were ſtationed in all the frontier towns of Flanders by order of the duke of Burgundy.

Sir Guy de Pontarlier, marſhal of Burgundy,

remained in garriſon in the town of Ardembourg, with ſir Rafflart de Flandres, ſir John de Jumont, ſir Henry du Coing, the lord de Montigny in Oſtrevant, the lord de Longueval, ſir John de Bernecte, ſir Peter de Bailleul, Belle-Fourriere, Phelippot Ganey, Raoullin de la Folie, and ſeveral more, to the amount of two hundred combatants. They determined among themſelves to make an excurſion into the Quatre Meſtiers and ravage that country, for much proviſion was carried from thence into Ghent. They therefore, having fixed on a day for this enterpriſe, armed themſelves and marched thither.

The ſame day that the French had fixed on for their expedition, about two thouſand determined men had ſallied out of Ghent under the command of Francis Atremen: accidentally they found themſelves in a village in the midſt of the French. When they had reconnoitred each other, they ſaw a battle was unavoidable. The French inſtantly diſmounted, and, graſping their lances, advanced on the enemy: the Ghent men, who were as numerous, did the ſame.

The combat began ſharply; but the Ghent men advanced into a paſs which was much to their loſs, where the battle was more ſevere: many gallant deeds were done, and many beat down. Sir Rafflart de Flandres in that place ſhewed the greateſt courage; and the knights and ſquires engaged the Ghent men with determined valour, as indeed it behoved them to do, for quarter was given to none.

At laſt the Ghent men, by having ſuperior numbers

numbers, gained the field, and the French were obliged to mount their horſes or they would have been ſlain, for their opponents much outnumbered them. In this encounter were killed ſir John de Bernecte, ſir Peter de Bailleul, Belle-Fourriere, Phelippot de Ganey, Raoullin de la Folie, and many others: the more the pity. The reſt were obliged to fly and re-enter Ardembourg, or they muſt inevitably have been killed.

After this event, the viſcount de Meaux was ſent with all his men at arms to garriſon Ardembourg, which he repaired and ſtrengthened. He had with him ſeveral knights and ſquires who were good determined ſoldiers. At this time ſir John de Jumont was great bailiff of Flanders, and had been ſo for the two preceding years. He was much feared through all that country for his great proweſs, and the deeds he had performed. Whenever he got hold of any Ghent men he put them to death, or had their eyes thruſt out, or their hands, ears or feet cut off, and in this ſtate ſent them away to ſerve as an example to their fellow-citizens. He was ſo renowned throughout all Flanders for his pitileſs juſtice in thus cruelly puniſhing the Ghent men, that no one was talked of but him in the whole country.

END OF THE SIXTH VOLUME.

J. M'CREERY, Printer,
Black-Horse-Court, Fleet-Street.

BIBLIOTHECA BODLEIANA